Colin Cohen about 80,000 words

[colinjcohen@icloud.com](mailto:desertedness@gmail.com)

THE CHANUKAH GIFT

by

Colin J Cohen

Blurb

On a Chanukah in a bleak California desert, a homeless man reconnects with his twin sister when he receives a series of letters postmarked from a Chanukah forty years earlier. The letters contain the journal of the dying teenage boy his sister unexpectedly came to love, who’s gifted the chance to replay the last year of his life and avoid the one thing that will end it: her.

As Tommy can only vaguely recall Rudi, this seems easy. He has everything: looks, wealth, and a bright future while she’s a troubled punk girl with no future at all. But he can’t control his increasing fascination of her, even as he uncovers a darkness surrounding her that could swallow them both.

With elements of mystery, magic realism, and memoir*, The Chanukah Gift* is a coming-of-age novel about the irrepressible pursuit of a happy ending, no matter how impossible it may be.

*Even punk girls blush*

*and love*

*Harder than they punch.*

*And they kiss you to tears*

*While you die in their arms.*

the first night

I didn’t know I had a twin sister when I was growing up until she came crashing upon me.

This would happen again forty years later, on a day that started like most others. With the sun doing all it could to avoid creeping above Interstate 15 a few blocks away, I pushed a garbage can through the back lot of the Motel 6 where I worked. I pushed it toward the dumpsters, where sat a scruffy and aging man.

A few steps from him, I came to a stop, in front of a pair of dirty needles that was lying among the sand blowing across the rotting asphalt. This was a sight so common that my only reaction was to pick them up with one of my heavily-gloved hands.

“Hey,” came the accented voice of someone behind me.

I turned toward it. Standing there with a big smile on his chubby face was the motel manager Amoun. He was always smiling at me. He got a kick out of our relationship: an Egyptian getting to boss around a Jew, or a “Hebrew” as he called me. He was singlehandedly reenacting Exodus.

I really was kind of his slave. He had me do eight hours of work in a four-hour shift, and he didn’t even pay me minimum wage. He found a loophole in the law that let him pay me less. But I didn’t really care about the money, especially as I wasn’t allowed to spend it. I needed the work, the more of it and the harder it was the better. So I indulged him in his Ramessesian fantasies.

“I want you to shampoo the hallway carpets today,” he told me, ours being the only Motel 6 with all interior corridors. “And power-wash the walkways. Oh, and the people in 110 last night left blood everywhere. Clean that up too.”

I nodded and turned around, and I dropped the needles into the can as the scruffy and aging man rose to his feet. He was a regular at the motel, who every morning paid his $70 bill in nickels.

With his hand shaking a bit, he pointed at what I had dropped. “Those weren’t mine. I would never just leave them on the ground like that.”

I tried not to grin. I tried hard. But I couldn’t help myself. “I appreciate that.”

Like the morning, the afternoon wasn’t much different than most others. Matt and I took a pair of buses from Hesperia and were walking home along 7th Street in Victorville, a festering city of concrete and glass that had never fully risen from the sands underneath it.

The two of us approached the setting sun, which seemed eager to disappear behind the horizon, and I glanced at Matt. He was the closest thing I had to a friend and the only reason I had a job, after he convinced Amoun that someone with Computer Science degrees really would make a good houseman.

Noticing that I was walking in the street and veering toward the heavy rush-hour traffic to the left of us, Matt smirked at me. “Get off the road, you idiot. You’re gonna get hit.”

Shaking my head, I threw my hands into the air. “If a man is destined to rot in the desert, he cannot get hit by a car.”

Matt chuckled and grabbed me by the collar of my coat, and he tossed me onto the sidewalk as a red Dodge Charger roared by.

I expected the evening would be like most others too. But I would discover there was something different about this one.

I glanced at a calendar on the wall as I dropped off my tray in the collection area of the dining hall, and I saw that it was the first night of Chanukah. A night like all others I was spending in a homeless shelter.

That it was Chanukah shouldn’t’ve mattered to me. I had lost faith long ago and religion before that. But the holiday invoked memories and mostly good ones.

These were still playing in my head as I waited at the head of a long line of people standing outside the office where we’d all check in for the night. They only came to an end when the glass door opened and Matt stepped past me carrying a towel in his hand.

It was my turn. I walked into the tiny room and up to a large man in his thirties, who was sitting behind the desk and crouched over it. With his graying beard, bulging belly, and red cheeks, Josh looked almost like Santa Claus, except without the jolly or good cheer.

He didn’t seem to notice me. He was gazing into the large schedule in front of him as if it held the secrets of the universe, and he began writing my name in a slot. “You got laundry tomorrow morning.”

I tried to hide my exasperation, which came from explaining to him night after night why I couldn’t do this. But I didn’t do a very good job of it. “I work in the morning, like I do almost every morning.”

With his own exasperation, he crossed out my name. “Kitchen. Tomorrow night.”

I didn’t respond. I just picked up a towel off the stack lying on the chair beside the desk and headed out the door.

“Hey,” he uttered, and I turned back to him.

He held out a thick white envelope. “This came for you.”

Barely glancing at it, I grabbed it and walked out of the office. I walked a few steps and tossed the towel up into my cubby. After leaving the building, I found myself in the shelter’s courtyard. This was set up like an outdoor diner, with a dozen cheap plastic booths and dozens of lost people passing the time in them.

I stood and listened to everyone. I listened to their stories of hunting for jobs they didn’t want and to their plans for leaving the shelter they didn’t believe. Through it all, I listened to the normality they tried to project. I listened to how vainly they tried this.

Vaguely, I recalled the envelope. This I opened, but only because I had nothing better to do. With even less enthusiasm, I pulled out a set of pages, which were handwritten in ink on both sides of lined white paper with ruffled edges. The kind I hadn’t seen since I was in school.

Glancing through them, my disinterest decreased with each one, until it hit me who had written them. This led me to grab the envelope and gape at it. With my mouth and eyes stretched wide, I saw that the return address was from a Tommy Goodwin in Livingston, New Jersey. This was shocking enough, but far more so was that it was postmarked forty years earlier.

Well into the chilly and windy evening, I sat at a booth far from everyone else in the corner of the courtyard. Under a full moon that silhouetted the palm trees and canyons to the right of me, I stared at the pages spread out on the table and tried to make sense of them.

I couldn’t. So I took out the cheap plastic phone they gave out for free to people like me. “Obamaphones,” most of us still called them even though he hadn’t been president in years. He wasn’t even the guy who came up with them. But I guess we had to call them something.

Slowly, I dialed a number. A number I hadn’t called in so long that I thought I’d forgotten it.

It rang and rang, and I suddenly hoped it wouldn’t answer. I even put my finger over the disconnect button and tried to find the courage to push it.

“Hello,” came her voice.

I couldn’t recall when I heard this last, but I would’ve recognized it after a thousand years. It was the same as it always was: strong and confident and unafraid. Along with it a serenity fell over me, and I found myself reaching out to touch it. But I didn’t reply to it. I just sat there dazed.

She repeated herself, and I found some words. “It’s me.”

Rudi had to look for words herself. She looked longer than I had. “Where are you?”

“It doesn’t matter. I don’t want to take up a lot of your time. I’m sure you must be busy tonight.”

“Services ended a while ago.”

“It’s just that, it’s just that I got something in the mail today . . . something from Tommy.”

“Tommy?”

I could hear her gasping for air and could almost see her falling forward. I even reached out to catch her. “I know it’s ridiculous, but it’s right in front of me.”

“What is?”

“I don’t know. It looks like a journal he wrote.”

“He never wrote a journal.”

“You sure about that?”

Rudi paused before answering. “I’m never sure of anything. It kinda comes with the job.”

“Do you want me to mail it to you? Maybe I could even scan it with my phone. I saw there’s this new app that uses a machine-learning technique I’ve been reading about to do character recognition. It’s supposed to be flawless.”

“Can’t you read it to me?”

I shook my head. “I just skimmed through it, but it seems real personal.”

“He must’ve wanted you to have it.”

“But how?”

“I’ve long stopped questioning how anything happens. Please read it to me. It’ll be the best Chanukah gift I’ll get.”

I didn’t reply. I wasn’t sure I wanted to live through what had happened again, and I was pretty sure I didn’t want her to. Still, with a drawn-out sigh, I collected and ordered the pages by the numbers written on the bottom of them, and I looked at the first entry, which was dated December 24, 1983. What I noticed right away about it was how the date was written in a different-colored ink than the rest of it, as if it had been written at a different time.

When reading someone’s journal, there’s an expectation that it will start at the beginning of their story. But Tommy’s started at the end.

He was glancing into a full-length mirror, where he saw a tall but gaunt and sickly young man sitting on a bed, whose hair was so thin that he could see through to his scalp. This man was wearing a white terrycloth robe and was tying a white ribbon over a red gift-wrapped box while snow fell through the window beside him and an old Glenn Miller song played from a portable stereo on an end table by the bed.

Hearing a chain rattle, Tommy noticed something else in the mirror: a small golden-haired dog lying by the door, who was watching him as if its life depended on it.

He returned to the ribbon, and he struggled to tie it. He struggled for what seemed like hours, knowing he had to get it just right. Over and over, he tied and untied it, often having to rest between the two.

With the sun beginning to fall, and with sweat pouring down his face, Tommy grinned at the big perfect loops spread across the width of the box. This stayed on his face as he slowly lifted himself and the box off the bed. Just as slowly, he wiped his brow and made his way out the door and into the living room, followed by the dog. It matched him step for step as he approached a mantle and the simple metal menorah on top of it.

Underneath this, Tommy lowered himself to his knees. This took time, more than it had to raise himself, but he got the gift on the floor as the front door of the apartment creaked open.

He turned his head toward it, and he saw a young woman his age, who otherwise couldn’t’ve been more different. She contrasted not only with him but with herself. Her short and spiked jet-black hair contrasted with her powder-white face as well as with her thick black mascara and a glossy black lipstick that perfectly matched her nails. Another contrast was the oversized blue-and-white football jacket she was wearing, which had “Tommy” and a big “C” stitched into the front of it.

He smiled at her, reflecting the joy washing over him. It just kept coming. It wouldn’t stop and was so strong that he couldn’t think of anything else. Still, some words mumbled out. “You’ve caught me.”

She didn’t smile back at him, and she shook her head. “I didn’t get you anything.”

“You’ve already given me your gift.”

“I did get you a little something.”

She marched over to him, and she kneeled beside him and took the small white seabag from over her shoulder, which she reached inside.

With surprise, she pulled out an envelope wrapped in a gold paper fashioned from countless little stars.

He leaned toward her. “What’s wrong?”

Her surprise only got stronger as she shook her head. “I don’t know. He must’ve slipped it into my bag somehow.”

“Who?”

“The old man at the store.”

“Can I open it?”

She didn’t answer. She kept gazing.

Gently, he took the envelope from her, and gently he opened it. From inside it he pulled out a white card, the kind you might find in a board game, and he read it.

Now it was her turn to lean toward him. She almost fell over. “What does it say?”

“One Replay.”

The second entry in Tommy’s journal was dated December 11, 1982, more than a year before the first, and I saw that the remaining entries were dated after that.

“Did you hear me?” spoke a familiar female voice next to Tommy.

He didn’t answer. He couldn’t. His attention was on the image reflecting off a window, of a confused but handsome and muscular seventeen-year-old boy, who had thick and wavy brown hair and who was wearing the blue-and-white football jacket with his name and the big “C” stitched into it.

The voice repeated itself, and Tommy noticed two things: the gray school backpack across his shoulder and that his other arm was around Darlene.

She was the most beautiful girl at Columbia High School. With strawberry-blonde permed hair and long perfect legs and a million-dollar smile, she could’ve easily become a model. The Jewish Brooke Shields everyone called her. But she had bigger ambitions than that. “Tommy?”

He spun toward her. “What?”

Glancing around, Tommy noticed he was leaning against the school. He was not far from its front doors, along with his friends and dozens of other kids, who were talking and joking around while waiting to go inside on a cold but sunny morning.

Trying to make sense of what he had experienced, or what he thought he had, Tommy came to the only conclusion that made sense: he’d been dreaming. Only it didn’t seem like a dream. While a dream may seem real while it’s happening, when you wake from it, it becomes obvious what it was. But this wasn’t. It seemed as real as what he was experiencing right then. Though, like when waking from a dream, he was quickly forgetting it.

Hurriedly, he released his arm from Darlene and swung his backpack off his shoulder, and he whipped out a spiral notebook and a pen from it and started writing frantically on the double-sided lined white paper.

Alarm came across Darlene’s face. “What are you doing?”

Tommy shook his head. “I gotta write this down.”

He wrote down everything he could remember, from the time he’d glanced into the mirror by the bed, and he read it. He read it again and again. “One replay? A replay of what?”

Darlene’s alarm turned into fright. “What are you talking about?”

Not even Tommy knew the answer. But he did know that he should’ve been happy, that whatever he’d experienced wasn’t real. Gazing once more at his reflection, he saw how healthy and strong he was and how he had his whole life ahead of him.

Despite this, he couldn’t help feel loathing. The same he’d felt for everything around him, including himself, since the summer. He felt this all the time apart from the few minutes he spent with that crazy-looking girl he didn’t know.

“Did you guys see that new Prince video on MTV?” said one of his friends, who were all wearing blue-and-white football jackets like his and who looked much like him. They all had similar pretty boy haircuts and the same type of preppy clothes, and they were all just as good looking. Judging by the pictures I would see of them in Tommy’s yearbook, they could’ve started a boy band if such a thing had existed then.

No one answered the question, and all chatter outside the school ceased. The silence was so deafening that Tommy turned from the window, and he saw that everyone was staring at the same thing. Approaching the school entrance from the parking lot below it were two people. The first was a large middle-aged man in an off-the-rack blue suit, who had a crewcut and a pockmarked face. But what everyone was staring at was the girl a few steps behind him. A girl who’d never in her life make a quiet entrance.

It was the same girl from his dream, with the same wild hair and makeup and who was carrying the same white seabag over her shoulder. The only differences were the Walkman clutched in her hand and what she was wearing: an old and oversized navy-blue overcoat, faded and torn blue jeans, and a pair of black Chuck Taylors. The latter two she was wearing at a time years before either were in fashion or were even close to coming into it. Tommy wrote that he couldn’t remember anyone wearing Converse since he was a little kid.

She must’ve been some sight that morning. While today I bet no one would look twice at her even in the Bible Belt, back then it must’ve been as if she’d dropped from the moon.

Tommy, of course, had already seen most of this sight. What he noticed about her now was the apathy on her face, which I’m sure she was feigning. While you could say a lot about punks, an awful lot, what you couldn’t say was that they didn’t care. It was kind of the whole point.

Rudi’s apathy was not only feigned but hiding something. The something underneath it that was always looking for a way out.

Watching her as she got near him, Tommy could feel his knees buckle. This was a sensation he long knew from playing football, but never did he feel it like this or this hard. He had to stammer to get some words out. “Who is she?”

No one answered, and he saw that the girl was close enough to notice all the eyes upon her. Her apathy turned into a scowl, and she stared down the whole school, looking as if she were ready to fight them all. With this she cranked the volume of her Walkman all the way up and sang off-key with a song Tommy had never heard, about someone who belonged to a “Blank Generation.”

Tommy never liked punk rock, and he especially never understood it. But this was different. Unlike any song he knew, the lyrics were about him, or someone just like him. Someone who had everything and nothing. Someone who was surrounded by others but alone. Someone who was desperate to get away, even if it meant never coming back.

The girl stopped singing, and her eyes locked on Tommy’s. It was as if he were the only one there, the only person in the world, and she glared at him. She glared and snarled.

Tommy couldn’t help grimace. But it was mostly at himself and his attraction to a girl he found vile in many ways but fascinating in many more. It wasn’t even because of his dream he found her fascinating. She was unlike any girl he knew, who walked so uprightly and didn’t seem to care what anyone thought of her. His heart pounded in increasing excitement with every step she took toward him, and he felt himself leaning toward her. He almost fell over.

“I thought Halloween was in October,” one of Tommy’s friends joked within steps of her, to a cackle of laughter that Tommy nervously joined in.

The girl continued to follow the man to the school entrance, but she turned her snarl on the boy. “How’d you like to go next year as a rug?”

The boy didn’t respond. He couldn’t.

The girl was just about to add something when the man interrupted her. “That’s enough.”

With a bit of a sigh, she returned her gaze to Tommy, along with her snarl, and he noticed how bloodshot her eyes were and how she was sweating despite the cold. But most of all he noticed how she was oblivious to the girl that was heading toward the same set of doors.

Maria was small and mousy and wore no makeup, and who underneath her plain black wool jacket was dressed in a white blouse and a long plaid skirt that fell below her knees. She looked like she was going to Catholic school as she hurried to the entrance without paying attention to who else was hurrying there. She and the new girl almost slammed into each other, only coming to a stop at the last moment.

Maria gazed at the girl in front of her. She gazed with a combination of shock and awe. It was as if she were witnessing a new form of life.

The girl gazed back, only without the shock or the awe, and she raised her fist. “How would you like some dentures?”

Maria didn’t answer, but she did respond. She took a step back in fright and then another.

The girl took a step toward her. But the man grabbed her by the arm. “What did I tell you, Rudi?”

There was no reply.

Grunting, the man slammed one of his shoulders into the heavy wooden doors, and he tossed Rudi inside the building like a rag and followed her inside.

“Who are you?” whispered Tommy, at a volume only he could hear and only barely.

Tommy wasn’t the only one curious about who this Rudi was, as she was largely a stranger to me. So I put down the page I was reading and asked her.

She didn’t want to answer and wasn’t bashful about it. “I thought Tommy was telling the story.”

“It’s interactive storytelling. All three of us.”

Rudi giggled but didn’t say a thing. However, I was in control of the situation and wouldn’t read any more until she relented.

She did but with lots of aggravation. “I can tell you I had more on my mind than some preppy jock.”

“Such as?”

“Such as I was jonesing like hell. I would’ve raced up the face of Everest for a handful of pills and wouldn’t’ve cared what they were. There was also a certain sword hanging over me. One that would’ve made Damocles piss in his pants or whatever he wore back then.”

“But Tommy obviously got to you.”

“That doesn’t mean it was love at first sight. I really didn’t think much of him, despite how gorgeous he was. Maybe it was even because of it. He was the best-looking guy I’d ever seen, better looking than anyone in movies or TV. But that just made me dislike him more. I was sure he was as boring as can be. Most guys like that are, in my experience. But . . .”

“But what?”

Rudi sighed, with more aggravation than before. “There was something about him. Something in the way he was looking at me. No one had looked at me like that. He was looking right through me. It was like he could see everything. But I brushed it off as nothing more than biological. I can assure you that, by the time I stepped through those school doors, or were thrown through them, I had completely forgotten about him.”

I doubted that, but I continued reading.

Along with many others heading to class and chatting about all kinds of nothing, Tommy wandered through the third-floor hallway in the school, not knowing where he was wandering through or to. It was as if he’d taken a spin in a dryer. He couldn’t walk straight as he came to the open door of his first-period computer class.

His mind was on anything but it, but he glanced inside anyway, and he saw a handful of students entering punch cards for use in the old computer on the other side of the room. This was how you programmed it. You’d punch out lines of code on the cards, and then you’d wait for an operator to feed them into the machine. Sometimes you’d wait a week just to compile the smallest of programs.

Watching this didn’t exactly make Tommy’s heart pound or make him lean forward. So when the bell rang, instead of spending the next hour writing the code that would have spewed a bunch of zeros across a printed page, he continued down the hall, looking into every classroom he passed.

At the end of the corridor, he stepped into the stairwell. He climbed down to the second floor, where he continued looking while thinking about his dream, and he began to question whether it really had been one. If it hadn’t, he realized it meant something incredible, that he’d been given the chance to replay a part of his life and avoid the fate that came with it. A chance that wasn’t likely compatible with Rudi, as why else would it begin when he met her? He knew for certain that without her it couldn’t possibly end the way it had.

So why was he looking for her? he screamed at himself. No matter how she was making him feel, she couldn’t be worth dying over.

Still he looked.

“What are you doing?” came the squeaky voice of someone a few steps behind him.

Startled, Tommy spun around, toward the small man behind the voice, who was wearing an argyle sweater over a button-down white Oxford and a blue paisley tie. “What?” he muttered.

“Why aren’t you in class?”

“I have a free period, and I was, I was looking for Mrs. Roth . . . she promised to help me with calculus.”

“Isn’t her classroom on the first floor?”

“Yeah. I guess, I guess I’m a little out of it today.”

Quickly, he scurried off, and he approached the end of the hall and another stairwell, where he glanced back and saw that the teacher was gone.

“If you’re thinking you can sleepwalk through this class, Ms. Weiss,” a female voice blared from the last room on the floor, “you might as well drop it right now.”

With some anxiousness, Tommy stepped up to the open door, and he peeked inside and saw a setup quite common at the school. Three long tables stood along the edges of the room, forming something of a rectangle with the teacher’s desk up front. At the back table, Rudi sat by herself, or rather slouched there, wearing a tattered white T-shirt that was held together by safety pins and had “Black Flag” handwritten above four black bars hand drawn in the shape of a flag.

Like outside the school, Tommy grimaced at Rudi. He grimaced while trying to imagine how he could end up with someone like her. She was a monster, he told himself, who didn’t care about anything or anyone. So he became convinced that his dream could’ve only been one. Yet he couldn’t move, nor could he stop looking at Rudi and wondering about her.

“Modern Poetry is one of the most challenging courses in the school,” continued Ms. Krasner, who wasn’t exactly tall but who was imposing nonetheless. A woman in her forties with thick-rimmed glasses and a black turtleneck sweater, she towered over everything. She was towering even as she leaned over a table while rummaging through a stack of textbooks in one of the front corners of the room. “You’ll be expected not only to write about poetry but also write some yourself and do it well. Shelley was publishing verse at your age, so I’ll make no excuse for your youth.”

“She had Frankenstein for inspiration,” quipped Darlene, who was sitting with a bunch of girls alongside the wall that separated the class from the hallway.

The quip caused the teacher to sigh. The exasperation poured out of her. “Wrong Shelley. But it was a nice try, Ms. Cantor. Almost.”

Sighing once more, the woman picked out a book, and she marched it toward Rudi. “This is an elective, Ms. Weiss. That means no one is forcing you to take it.” She marched the book all the way up to Rudi. Noticing her apathy, she frowned and dropped the book onto the table in front of her, where it bounced a few times before coming to a rest.

Rudi yawned, slowly and deliberately.

Scowling, the teacher put her hands on her hips. “Have you ever even read poetry?”

“Can she read?” uttered Darlene, causing chuckles among the students. Even Krasner grinned.

“Can you?” Rudi shot back. “I mean other than *Vogue*.”

The students again chuckled, louder than before, and Krasner again grinned. “Touché, Ms. Cantor.”

Still grinning, the woman stepped up to the center blackboard, where the poem “since feeling is first” was written in perfect script and which she gazed at in joyful wonder. “Can anyone tell me something about E. E. Cummings?”

“He wrote his name in lowercase,” Darlene answered with a knowing grin.

Rudi sneered. “That’s just a myth.”

Krasner turned to Rudi in surprise. “That’s right, Ms. Weiss. Can you tell us anything else about him? Something perhaps more interesting.”

“He did use unorthodox typography and grammar. But that was only a product of his hatred of convention and constraints, of anything that got in his way, including language.”

With a bit of a smirk, Rudi put her feet on the table, and she crossed her arms. “Basically, he was a punk.”

Krasner laughed. It seemed she laughed more at Rudi than at her assertion. “Is that so? He certainly didn’t look the part.”

“Punk has nothing to do with looks or even music. It’s about attitude. He-was-a-punk.”

“You need to dig deeper, Ms. Weiss. Your argument’s interesting but lazy, and we’ll have none of that here. There’s way more to Cummings than his attitude.”

Again, Rudi sneered. “Too bad the same can’t be said of you.”

Krasner glared at Rudi. She glared at her for a long time, but once more she turned to the poem and began reading it aloud.

Poetry was never Tommy’s thing. He liked it even less than punk rock. So, as the words echoed through the classroom and into the hall, he started down it, with Krasner’s voice fading as he did.

*my blood approves,*

*and kisses are a better*

*fate than wisdom*

This surprised Tommy and caused him to come to a stop. It wasn’t the words that surprised him but his reaction to them, even if he couldn’t say exactly what this was. He only knew he did react. This was so strong that it turned him around and drew him toward the class.

*- the best gestures of my brain*

*is less than*

*your eyelids’ flutter which says*

*we are for each other*

Without realizing it, Tommy was again in the threshold of the room, where he saw Rudi had removed her feet from the desk and was leaning toward the blackboard with something past excitement. She had almost pushed the table over in front of her.

The poem came to an end, and Krasner spun toward the class. She did with as much excitement as Rudi, which shot through the room. “His words not only mix splendor and dissonance but are saturated with an irrational passion. Cummings was a Romantic above all else. Or a neo-Romantic, as some would call him.”

The teacher paused. She paused for just a moment. “‘Shelley in a blender’ is what I’d call him. That’s Percy Shelley, Ms. Cantor.”

Again, the woman paused as she sat on the edge of her desk. “I want to see this irrational passion in your next assignment, due a week from Wednesday. You will write me a poem worthy of Cummings and his magic. A poem he might’ve written himself if he were you. And I will flunk anyone who does nothing more than play with their typography or grammar. I want to see passion. I want to see it all over the page!”

Rudi turned toward the door, as if she just now realized someone was watching her. Slowly, she turned, and with surprise she noticed Tommy and his gaze.

Tommy noticed something too. He noticed her eyelids flutter.

This sent him rushing off while wondering if his had been doing the same.

In the school cafeteria at lunch, Rudi walked through the center of the cavernous hall carrying a tray weighted down with food. There was a mountain of it, even if all Tommy could see was the fruit on top.

Table after table she passed, with waves of heads turning toward her from all directions.

She ignored this, or she at least pretended she did. Despite appearances, I know she really did care what people thought of her, and this always angered her. This likely made her ignore the gazes even more. She ignored them until she saw one she couldn’t. It was coming from a table full of football players and beautiful girls and was cutting right through her.

Tommy looked away while trying to convince himself that he didn’t really see Rudi’s eyelids flutter, that he had just imagined it. For how could some poet’s overly-romanticized notion of life be true? Eyelids don’t flutter, he hollered inside his head, nor do people blush or swoon. We live in a purely rational world, where 2 + 2 can never equal 5. But again he glanced at Rudi and saw she was staring at him and making him shiver all over.

Suddenly, Tommy realized that Darlene was sitting next to him and that her arm was around his. He wasn’t the only one who realized this. Rudi spun from him, and she rushed toward the back of the cafeteria, looking as if she were going to smash through the wall. But at an empty table in front of it she came to a stop, and she sat and picked at the pile of food.

Approaching her with a more modest lunch was a boy who was somewhere else, much like he always was. Eliot was short, with a pimply face and greasy brown hair, and was wearing a blue button-down polyester shirt, brown Haggar slacks, and white sneakers. He wasn’t exactly cool. He was the kind of kid every bully dreams of. Even some of them felt sympathy for him, including the ones who’d bully him regardless.

Eliot reached Rudi’s table, and he saw who was sitting there and froze. He froze mid-step.

Rudi couldn’t endure much of this, and her snarl returned. “Can I help you?”

“I . . . I usually eat here.”

“So?”

Eliot didn’t answer. He just backed up. Slowly, he backed up. He backed up as if retreating from a raging lioness, which wasn’t far from the truth.

Rudi turned from this, and she took a notepad and a pen from her seabag. With these, she glanced at Tommy and started doodling.

“Can you believe she’s in my poetry class?” remarked Darlene when she noticed what Tommy was staring at.

Tommy, of course, could believe this, but he shrugged.

“She’s also in my chemistry class. She probably should be teaching it.”

“What do you mean?”

“The rumor is that she’s a bigtime druggie.”

Tommy tried to make this matter. He tried for it to dissuade him from his increasing obsession of Rudi. He tried and tried and then tried some more. But it didn’t mean a thing, and he wasn’t sure anything could.

“I was very disappointed with the results of this quiz,” spoke Mrs. Roth, as the aging woman in an aging grey dress handed papers to the students in her class. This included Tommy, who glumly looked at the “D” written on the top of his from his usual seat in the front row. “You should’ve mastered conic sections by now. Most of you will have to do a lot better to have any chance of passing the AP exam, much less this class.”

The teacher was about to add some further invectives when her attention was interrupted by Rudi, who sauntered into the classroom clutching a crumpled printout of her class schedule. She was clutching it as if it were a fast food wrapper she was about to discard.

The teacher looked at Rudi. She looked at her up and down many times over and did so incredulously. “Yes?”

Rudi waved her schedule at the woman. She waved it irreverently. “This is where I’m supposed to be.”

Looking even more incredulous, Mrs. Roth marched up to Rudi, and she grabbed the printout and both uncrumpled and read it. She read it again and again. “We’ll see about that, Miss Weiss.”

These words pained Rudi. It was all over her face. “*Ms. Weiss*.”

“Excuse me?”

“Do I look like a ‘miss’?”

The woman pointed behind Rudi. “Solve the problem on the board.”

Rudi turned and saw an equation on the blackboard.

“Use partial fraction decomposition to integrate that function,” the teacher demanded.

With some surprise, Rudi spun back to Mrs. Roth. “You’re joking, right?”

“I rarely joke about partial fraction decomposition.”

Rudi sighed, but she marched up to the board, where she picked up a piece of chalk and solved the problem. She solved it in a handful of seconds, filling the board with numbers and formulae.

Watching this, the teacher couldn’t hide her shock. It emptied out of her. “That took me twenty minutes to solve this morning.”

Rudi responded by writing “Q.E.D.” in big letters on the board next to the solution before dropping the chalk onto the easel. She dropped it much like Ms. Krasner had dropped the textbook in front of her, causing it to bounce a few times.

Mrs. Roth grinned. “Quite easily done.”

With a sigh, Rudi frowned at her. “It means *quod erat demonstrandum: that which was to be proven*.”

“A girl after my own heart. You’ve earned your seat here, *Ms. Weiss*. Perhaps you can even help some others here keep theirs.”

Snatching the schedule from Mrs. Roth, Rudi glanced at Tommy as she headed toward a seat in the back of the room, with Tommy shifting his eyes to the mark on the paper in front of him.

Tommy exited a first-floor stairwell along with lots of others as they headed out of the school at the end of the day.

Reaching a restroom, he heard a familiar voice coming from inside it that made him stop by the door.

“He doesn’t care about you!” Rudi howled, causing Tommy to wonder who she could be howling at. “Nobody does! I don’t even care about you!”

The door swung open, hitting Tommy in the face, and Rudi rushed out of the bathroom by herself.

Slowly, the door returned to its frame, and Tommy stood there and watched her rush off.

“It’s my choice,” he argued with himself while trying not to follow her. It was his choice what he did with his life and his so-called “replay.” It was no one else’s. It especially wasn’t hers. But still he followed her. He followed her down the hallway, and he followed her when she turned left toward the front doors, and he followed her through them. He followed her all the way outside, where he saw her marching toward a crowd of people that had encircled something on the edge of Parker Avenue.

Passing Darlene and her best friend Beth, a short blonde with a ponytail and girl-next-door looks, Rudi noticed them whispering among themselves as they snickered at her. They kept snickering until Beth’s mountain of a boyfriend named Joey came up behind her and tapped her on the shoulder.

She spun toward him, and he pointed behind himself with his thumb. “Let’s go.”

Quickly, she followed him, though while glancing at Rudi. “That’s the girl I was telling you about.”

“She doesn’t look like much to me.”

Darlene again snickered at Rudi, who ignored it and reached the crowd, where she looked over someone’s shoulder. Seeing what everyone was staring at, she pushed her way through them. Tommy wrote that she looked like Moses parting the Red Sea. She was an irresistible force and kept pushing until she reached the street and came upon a small golden-haired dog, who was whimpering and bleeding by the side of the road and was looking a lot like the one from Tommy’s dream.

Rudi kneeled in front of the animal, and she swept it into her arms and cradled it, and she tried to comfort and calm it. Tommy had never seen anyone act so gently. It belied everything about her. But so did everything else.

“There’s an animal hospital at the end of Valley,” a voice called out.

Rudi turned toward it, and she saw Maria pointing the way with great excitement. “I volunteer there on weekends. The vet’s really great.”

Rudi glanced at the dog’s state, and she kissed its head. “I don’t think we’d get there in time.”

“But we can,” Tommy yelled as he jumped in front of her.

With the dog still in her arms, Rudi raced through the school parking lot with Tommy, and the two came to a stop by a Harley Sturgis.

Rudi glanced at it in surprise as she tried to catch her breath. “You drive a motorcycle?”

Tommy smirked. “I like to live dangerously.”

“I bet.”

With the smirk still on his face, Tommy jumped onto the bike. But Rudi didn’t follow.

“Come on!” he cried out.

Hesitantly, she climbed onto the seat behind him. But she didn’t do anything more, and he became impatient. “I suggest you put your arm around me, unless you want to fly there.”

Even more hesitantly, she put one arm around him while she continued to clutch the dog with the other, and they shot out of the lot onto Parker. At the corner of Valley, they turned left and sped through traffic, weaving around cars and trucks while running both red lights and stop signs.

Driving recklessly was something Tommy was good at. He did it all the time, much like some kids cut themselves, just so he could know that he was alive and that this meant something. But never did it do a thing for him, even when he came close to death. Only now did it mean anything.

In the cramped white waiting area of the animal hospital, Tommy and Rudi quietly sat next to each other, with each looking straight ahead.

Glancing at her, Tommy noticed something. “You’ve got some blood on your coat.”

Rudi looked at herself and the blood, and she turned to him. “It’s not the first time. You’ve got some too, on the back of your jacket.”

“It’s all right.”

“Thanks. I mean, thanks for doing this.”

“Sure.”

Again, the two looked straight ahead. They looked as quickly as possible, and they saw a stoic-looking vet in glasses and a white lab coat approach them while reading from a medical chart.

Glumly, the two stood and awaited the news.

The woman stopped in front of them, still reading the chart. “She’s in pretty bad shape.”

Rudi lowered her eyes.

While lowering her chart, the vet smiled. “She’s got a long recovery in front of her, but she’s going to be just fine.”

Shocked, Rudi gaped at the woman. “Really?”

“It’s fortunate you got her here so quickly.”

Neither Rudi or Tommy said anything, and the woman took a good look at the pair with a face full of skepticism. “I guess you two can’t pay for this.”

“I can,” Tommy told her, and he pulled out his wallet and a credit card from it and handed it to her.

The woman took it and marched off, and Tommy turned to Rudi, and the two looked at each other while searching for words they couldn’t find.

Slowly, Rudi started backing up. “I guess I should be going.”

“You want a lift?” he wondered.

“I’m fine.”

Quicker, she moved, and she bumped into a wall. While trying to hide her embarrassment, she spun around and burst out of the office, with Tommy staring at her. He stared at her even after she was gone.

Tommy lay on his bed late into the evening while writing in his notebook, with crumpled pages all around him on the floor. He wrote down everything that had happened that day. He wrote it many times over until he had the words right. He even sketched out some of the scenes on the edges of the paper.

As he finished, he began hearing music. This was playing only in his head and was the same old Glenn Miller song he had heard in his dream. It played over and over, and he could feel himself dancing to it with his arms around someone. Someone he couldn’t see but whose heartbeat matched not only his but the gentle beat of the trombone.

“Tommy, you up?” called out a female voice from outside his door.

The music came to an end, and Tommy saw he was clutching a pillow.

“Tommy?”

Trying to hide his frustration, Tommy tossed the pillow onto the floor. “Yeah?”

“How about inviting Darlene over for dinner tomorrow? I’d love to see her.”

“Perhaps, perhaps some other time.”

There was no reply, but Tommy could hear his mother walk off.

What he couldn’t hear was the song. No matter how hard he tried to recreate it in his head, it just wouldn’t come. Left to his thoughts, he could think of only one thing: a certain someone and what she was doing right then.

Like Tommy, I was wondering what this certain someone was doing right then. But, like when I had interrupted the narrative earlier, she didn’t want to tell me. But, like then, she didn’t have a choice if she wanted me to read her the rest of the journal.

“I was banging against the walls of the dump I was staying at,” she screeched.

“You were what?”

“I was listening to Bad Brains’ *Yellow Tape*, which a friend had given me after I got out of jail, and I was doing what I always did when I listened to them. H.R., his voice would reach out and grab me by the neck, and it would throw me into wall after wall. It still does this. I bang into walls whenever I listen to them, which I can tell you raises quite a few eyebrows at work. I listen to Richard Hell when I’m afraid, but I listen to Bad Brains when I want to forget. That night, ‘Big Take Over’ was blasting into my head like a jackhammer into concrete. I listened to it like six thousand times. There was nothing but that song as I kept smashing into walls, breaking plaster everywhere. And then . . .”

“Then what?”

“Then a big fist hit one of the walls from the other side. It almost punched through it, and a voice hollered, ‘Stop that racket!’

“I didn’t say anything back. I just fell to the floor and sat there gasping for breath, with sweat pouring down my face and my arms around my legs. I was trying to will myself to be anywhere else. But it didn’t work. It never did.

“‘There’s some fries out here if you want,’ the voice said next. But I didn’t want anything, especially from him. I especially didn’t want those fries.”

“You weren’t thinking about Tommy,” I asked.

“Why do you think I was listening to Bad Brains?” she groaned.

I chuckled. “But now you couldn’t listen to them.”

“Now I couldn’t listen to them. All I could do was pull out the drawing I had made at lunch, and I looked at it in surprise. I really had thought I’d been drawing Lee Ving, who was my crush at the time. Me and just about every punk girl on the planet, and probably lots of punk boys too. But there was something wrong with it. While the drawing had Ving’s eyes, which were piercing into me even when rendered in two dimensions, the hair was too wavy, and the nose and chin too chiseled. Soon, I realized who was actually staring at me from the drawing, and I tore out the page and crumpled it, and I threw it across the floor. But . . .”

“But what?”

“This did nothing. So I crawled over to the paper and uncrumpled it, and I tried to convince myself that my attraction was hopeless. ‘You’re so not good enough,’ I mumbled. ‘You’re so not him.’”

“I have just one more question.”

“What’s that?”

“This person who was staring at you from the drawing, did his eyelids flutter?”

“There are some things I will keep to myself.”

“That was a yes,” I blurted out as I turned the page, causing Rudi to chuckle, which is when I saw that I was back at the first page. “That, that’s it.”

I shuffled through the entries, looking for some more, but I couldn’t find any.

“What do you mean?” she cried out.

“That was the last page he sent me.”

“But that’s not the end of the story.”

“I know it’s not the end. But that’s all he sent me.”

“Today.”

“What?”

“That’s all he sent you today.”

“What do you mean?”

“There are seven more nights of Chanukah,” she told me, and I could just about see the smile on her face.

“You think he’s gonna send me more? I mean, you think he *sent* me more?”

“Call me tomorrow night.”

There wasn’t the slightest doubt in her voice that I’d have a reason to as she hung up.

It was after midnight when I got off the phone with Rudi. But even though I had to work the next morning, I couldn’t go to bed. I still had to wait for a bus pass so I could get to work.

This waiting was a ritual, regardless of who was working the night shift. But with Josh it was the worst. Some nights he would make me wait hours, enjoying my dependence on him. On this night, though, I didn’t wait more than an hour for him to slowly rise from his seat and open the door.

“Yes?” he said, despite knowing exactly why I was there.

I told him.

With a forced sigh, he returned to his desk. From this he took out a stack of day passes that the shelter got for free, and he offered me one. But he wouldn’t let go of it. “This is a pretty sweet deal you get here. Free transportation every day.”

“I’d buy my own if you guys let me spend the money I earn.”

“That’s right. We’d throw you out if we caught you spending money.”

He let go of the pass, but not without adding, “We could throw you out for just about anything. Actually, anything at all.”

I left the office. As I put the pass in my wallet, I walked down the hall, passing the door to the women’s dorm on my left. The women in the shelter had it harder than the men, especially those with children, who had to sleep in the dorm with them. Even their teenage boys had to do this. But as uncomfortable as this must’ve been, leaving the shelter could’ve been worse. While no one wanted to be on the streets of Victorville, especially in the winter, the cold was the least worst thing facing women there. Because of this, they were far more dependent on the place than we were.

The men’s dorm was a little past them across the hall. I entered it, to snoring so loud that it could’ve waken a cemetery, even the one in Arlington. Slowly, I made my way through the dark, in an enormous room filled with dozens of bunk beds and all the weary men sleeping on them. I walked to the back of the room and came to my bed.

Groaning a bit, I climbed to the top, where I took off my coat and jeans and put them under my pillow along with Tommy’s letter. While stretching out of the thin and decaying mattress, I tried to fall asleep. This trying was another nightly ritual, and on this night it was both the same and not. What made it different and unlike all others was that I actually had something to look forward to the next day.

the second night

I woke in the middle of the night.

It wasn’t the snoring that woke me, even though this was as loud as before. What did was the same thing that woke me almost every night. Something that was always there but never as strong as at this time.

Wave after wave of darkness came over me. With each came demons, who crawled into my head and pushed me down. They pushed me below the floor. They pushed me until I thought I’d never get up while reminding me of just how badly I had screwed up my life and how I could never undo this or even make things bearable.

All I could do in response was lay there and pray for the sun to rise, so I could go to work and think of anything else.

Sudden light filled the room.

I didn’t need to look at the time on my phone to know it was six in the morning. This was when they woke us every day but Sunday, when they waited till seven.

While many of us that morning tried to ignore the light by any means, I got up with the others who had something to do or wanted to pretend they did. Like I did every morning, I pulled my coat and jeans from under the pillow, and I checked my wallet and its contents.

Satisfied that my eight dollars was still there, I put the wallet in my jeans and put it and the coat on, and I crawled out of bed and down to the floor. From there I crept out of the enormous room to the door, where I saw Matt asleep in the bottom bunk.

I shook him a bit, but all he did was grumble.

This made me think of something that I hadn’t in decades, an old TV commercial, and I grinned. “Time to make the doughnuts.”

Matt chuckled but didn’t open his eyes, and I went into the corridor and stepped up to the cubbies, which were stacked onto each other in three rows. When I first got to the shelter that summer, they gave me a cubby on the top even though I’m not exactly tall. So, like every morning, I had to climb up like a monkey to get my towel, shower bag, and a clean set of clothes.

With these I walked a few steps into the men’s room and up to one of the three communal sinks, where I shaved and brushed my teeth along with another of the early risers. Here I was forced to look at my decaying image in the big mirror. Every morning I seemed older and thinner, and this morning wasn’t different. Still, I found myself humming. I was humming the song my sister had been singing on her first day of Columbia, which I kept humming as I headed toward the shower stalls down the way.

By the long bench in front of them, I undressed and put my wallet in my shower bag. This was something every guy in the shelter learned to do if they wanted to have any money when they left the shower. Having your money stolen while you showered was kind of a rite of passage at the shelter. It happened so often that the staff just laughed when people complained about it, even when they lost hundreds of dollars.

With my bag and towel, I stepped into one of the stalls and turned on the hot water, and I enjoyed the few minutes of normal I was given each day.

I got a bagged lunch from the guy working in the kitchen, and I made a cup of green tea, which was all I could stomach in the morning. I took this into the courtyard, where I saw the mothers getting their kids ready for school. It looked like they were trying to give them the same semblance of normal I had just experienced. They were also trying to make them feel special in a place where they were anything but. They were trying to make them feel that they mattered. A few were combing their children’s hair while others smiled as they watched them play. One was even checking her son’s homework.

On the surface, the kids seemed like any other. You couldn’t tell they were different from those with homes. But it was what you couldn’t see that likely made them different. There was a prevalent rumor that it was kids who were stealing everyone’s money by the men’s showers. Whether it was true or not, there were probably worst things they could be doing.

Glancing around the courtyard, I saw Nicole and Allison. They were at the same corner booth where I talked to Rudi the night before, drinking coffee and smoking. They could do the latter because cigarettes were something that the shelter, for a reason I could never learn, allowed us to buy. Maybe it was their way of guaranteeing attrition.

I joined the women, who were both in their early thirties, sitting next to Nicole. She was someone who made a lie of every stereotype of a homeless person. She worked two jobs as a manufacturing supervisor and was as bright as the long desert days. Unlike most homeless people I knew, including myself, she was someone who never lost hope and always conveyed this wonderful joy from being alive. What’s more, she didn’t seem to suffer from any psychological or substance issues. She was a victim of things she couldn’t control. After her husband went to prison, medical bills overwhelmed her, and she was desperately saving as much as she could so she could get herself out of the shelter and get her kids back from Child Protective Services.

“Saturday night we’re having it,” she told Allison.

“Having what?” I asked.

Nicole glanced around the courtyard and leaned toward me. “I was talking to Lynnette the other night. She’s turning ten on Saturday, and she’s really upset about having a birthday here. So we’re throwing her a party. A big one.”

“Are you serious?”

“Keep quiet about it. I want it to be a surprise.”

“How are you gonna pay for it?”

“I’ll figure it out.”

The Motel 6 where Matt and I worked was only a ten-minute drive down the road from the shelter. But there was no bus going down this road, even though the largest mall in the Victor Valley was on it along with every store imaginable. So each day the two of us took a pair of buses that crisscrossed the valley and all the concrete and glass randomly strewn across it. This would usually take an hour and a half, but that was only if one of the buses weren’t late, which happened rarely.

On this morning, though, the buses got us to the motel a few minutes early. Matt wanted something to eat, so we walked to the convenience store a block away by the 76 gas station. Recalling what I had told him earlier, with a grin he bought a box of doughnuts with his EBT food card, which was another exception the shelter allowed when it came to spending money. As he stuffed the doughnuts into his mouth, the two of us went back to the motel and punched in on the PC in Amoun’s office.

We stepped out of it just as the guy with the nickels came to pay for his room that day. The whole counter became covered in Jeffersons and Monticellos, and the poor clerk had to count each one, more than fourteen hundred after including tax.

She was still counting them when the automatic doors swung open and Amoun walked inside with one of his smiles. “Where is my Hebrew?”

I smiled back and raised my hand. “Right here, Pharoah.”

He turned to me, with his smile still on his face. “Have you been cleaning out the weeds in the back lot?”

“Whenever I get a chance.”

“Be a *mensch* and get a chance right now.”

Cleaning the weeds in the large field behind the back parking lot was an endless task, as the place was a magnet, for the garbage guests would leave and for the waste coming from the desert surrounding it. On top of this, the weeds would endlessly grow, regardless of how many I pulled from the ground and despite the apparent lack of water. So no matter how much progress I would make on a given day, a few days later it would be worse than before.

I’d lost track of how long I’d been out there when one of the cleaning ladies walked outside of the motel with her cart for a cigarette break. This woman had the most beautiful name I had ever heard: Alaya. It’s Arabic for “sublime,” and it certainly fit.

Like Nicole, Alaya refused to fit a stereotype, and there were any number you could’ve applied to her. She was an immigrant, as were most of the cleaning women at the motel. But she was young and from England. She even sounded just like Paul McCartney. Also like Nicole, Alaya was full of life. Despite the bleakness of her job and surroundings, she always had a smile on her face, and she seemed like she would burst from the excitement bubbling inside her at any moment.

Noticing me as she took a drag of her cigarette, Alaya gave me one of the accentuated waves I had come to look forward to every day.

I waved back, feeling a brief moment of happiness. But I did while wondering who she really was and why she was here. I didn’t even know why I was wondering this.

Work ended early in the afternoon, but both buses home were late. It took more than four hours to get to the shelter. I got there as dinner was ending and people were beginning to line up to check in for the night.

Quickly, I made myself a sandwich and ate it while cleaning the kitchen as fast as I could, which wasn’t very.

There were only a few people waiting in line when I finished. But getting to the front of it took forever as I anxiously waited for the envelope I hoped would be waiting for me. I felt the same anxiousness I had every Chanukah day when I was a kid, waiting for the present that was waiting for me.

I wanted to believe that Rudi had been right and that another letter from Tommy would be there, despite my pessimism of not only this but of all things. I wanted to believe it as much for myself as for her and maybe more. However, when it was my turn to enter the office, there was nothing on the desk.

But I had to ask. “Anything come for me today?”

“Like what?” Josh asked back.

“Like a letter. Like the one that came for me yesterday.”

He looked around his desk. “I don’t see anything. Do you?”

I didn’t reply. I grabbed a towel and started out.

“Laundry tomorrow morning,” he said.

“I work tomorrow morning,” I shot back.

“Dining hall bathrooms tomorrow night.”

Again, I didn’t reply. With my head down and the towel in my hand, I left the office. I took the towel to my cubby and was about to toss it up there like I usually did. But for some reason I climbed up to it, and there it was: another thick envelope from Tommy.

Not even caring how it got there, with great excitement I grabbed it and jumped down. I was so excited that I forgot that I still had the towel in my hand. I tossed this into the cubby, and I rushed outside into the courtyard and to the corner booth, where I ripped open the envelope and pulled out its contents, and I called my sister.

She answered on the first ring. “Yeah?”

“You were right,” I told her.

“You sound surprised.”

I chuckled a little. “You ready?”

“Since last night.”

The sun sneaked through the clouds above a large three-story white manor in Newstead, the most exclusive section of South Orange and one of the wealthiest areas in the state.

In a bedroom on the top floor of the house, Tommy exited his bathroom wearing a white terrycloth robe. Stopping in the doorway, he peered out the big window in front of his room, toward the Manhattan skyline in the distance.

It was a million-dollar view, his mother would always tell him and everyone else she could. But it looked ordinary this morning. Everything seemed ordinary in comparison to a certain something else. In his seventeen and a half years, never had a girl so much as made him shrug. But in a single day this one had sent him tumbling about as if he’d been hit by a wave out of nowhere.

Slowly, Tommy stepped past a pair of trophy cases. These showcased his sporting and academic triumphs over the years, which included his naming to the honor roll every quarter of his high-school career and his naming of all-state in football the year before.

Next he passed the posters of the Yardbirds on his walls, from their early Eric Clapton years to their last days with Jimmy Page, and he came to a full-length mirror in the corner of the room. He noticed that it was not unlike the one he had stared at in his dream or whatever it had been.

He stared at this one too. He stared not only at himself but at the gold chai necklace he was wearing. The one he’d gotten years earlier on his *bar mitzvah.* The pendant had actually been his mother’s, who’d been given it by her mother, and Tommy had admired it for as long as he could remember. So, even though boys usually got Star of David necklaces or mezuzahs on their *bar mitzvah*, his mother got a new chain for the pendant and gave it to him.

It had been the only gift that ever mattered to Tommy. Though, as he put the pendant between his fingers, which represented the Hebrew word for “living,” for the first time he thought about what the word really meant.

Wearing his football jacket over a white wool Polo sweater along with pleated khakis and freshly-polished brown penny loafers, Tommy carried his backpack down a long and winding wooden staircase. He carried them over the sounds of Julie London’s velvety voice. It bounced off wall after wall in the house as she sang “Two Sleepy People” from a record playing in the living room.

It was a beautiful song, Tommy had always thought, especially this arrangement. It was perfect in every way. But it depressed him, knowing who was listening to it and why.

At the bottom of the stairs, Tommy inched up to the wall that separated the hallway he was walking through from the dining room, and he peeked at a woman who had just turned fifty. With her dirty-blonde hair tied tightly in a bun, she was sitting by herself at one end of the table, wearing a blue Dior dress that perfectly complemented the floral arrangement in the center of the table as she gazed at the empty seat at the other end of the table. A seat she knew would forever be empty.

She looked so lonely, he thought, and he wondered if that’s how he’d look when he was her age. He wondered if he’d spend his days just like she was, doing nothing more than glancing back at times that could never return.

Mercifully, the song came to an end, and Tommy stepped into the room and sat next to his mother while dropping his backpack beside his feet.

The two exchanged good mornings as a large servant in a pristine white uniform entered from the kitchen, who served them a breakfast of omelets and hash browns, along with orange juice and coffee. She left the latest editions of the *New York Times* and the *Star Ledger* on the table with them, even though she knew neither would be touched.

“Thank you, Elizabeth,” spoke Mrs. Goodwin, with an aristocratic flare that even she knew was affected, and she politely smiled at the woman.

Elizabeth smiled back in a similar manner and nodded, and she left the room with her silver tray.

With a bit of a sigh, Mrs. Goodwin forced herself to start eating. But when she noticed that her son wasn’t even doing this, that he was just picking at his food, she put down her utensils. “What’s wrong?”

Tommy continued his picking. “Nothing.”

“You’re a bad liar. Always have been.”

He said nothing, and the woman sighed again. She sighed in exasperation. “It must be this crazy diet kick you’re on.”

This got Tommy exasperated. “It’s not.”

“Then what is it?”

Tommy gave up the pretense of eating, and he put his utensils down. “I don’t know. I met someone.”

Surprised, the woman turned to him. “You met someone? What about Darlene?”

“What about her?”

“She’s perfect for you.”

“For me or for you?”

Mrs. Goodwin grinned, and she took a small sip of coffee. “Why don’t you invite her for dinner.”

Now Tommy was surprised. “Who?”

“This girl you’ve fallen for.”

“I haven’t fallen for her,” Tommy growled, with more exasperation than before.

“You’re a bad liar. Always have been.”

Part of him wanted to laugh. But the other part grabbed his backpack off the floor, and he rose to his feet and marched off.

“So, will she be coming to dinner tonight?” his mother called out.

Slowing down a little, Tommy shook his head. “She’s not so easy to like.”

“Then we have something in common.”

“You have a lot in common. More than I realized until now.”

“I’d love to meet her.”

Tommy came to a stop, and he turned back to his mother. “How did you know Dad was the one?”

She didn’t need a moment’s thought to answer this. “When I didn’t have to ask.”

Tommy continued out of the room. Though, as he reached the wall, he glanced back at his mother, and he noticed that she was again gazing at the empty chair and that she was again listening to Julie London, even if the music was playing only in her head.

In the school parking lot, Tommy parked his bike and saw something strange. It was so strange that he had to look at it a couple of times just to make sure it was real.

Rudi and Maria were walking toward the front doors of Columbia together. By the way they were talking to each other, someone could’ve easily mistaken them as friends, despite the incongruity of them existing in the same universe.

“If no one claims her,” Maria excitedly told Rudi, “she’ll go up for adoption. You should adopt her.”

Rudi smirked. “We could get matching dog collars.”

They both laughed, and this surprised Tommy even more than seeing the two walk to school together. He had known Maria since elementary school, but never in all that time had he even seen her smile.

Tommy kept watching the two as they entered the building, and he headed there himself. At the doors he saw another strange sight. Coming to a stop in the front of the building was a red Porsche 944.

Even in the affluent neighborhood he lived, kids didn’t drive to school in Porsches. Maybe kids at Pingry drove to school in them, but they never at Columbia. So he gazed at the car, and he could see the silhouette of someone inside it. Someone who was staring right at him.

Like the day before, I interrupted the story. “This is something I’ve always wanted to know.”

She said nothing back, and I could tell something was wrong.

“Rudi?”

“What?”

“Are you all right?”

“It’s just . . . we’re coming up to something not so wonderful.”

“What?”

“It doesn’t matter.”

“I could skip over stuff.”

“I want you to read me everything.”

I was hesitant about this. But instead of starting an argument, I changed the subject. “How did you and Maria become friends? It never made sense.”

“It still doesn’t. That’s the beauty of it. Or one of them. There are lots.”

“So how did it happen?”

“That morning on the bus I was kind of in a netherworld, where the only thing that existed were a pair of eyes. I was also humming this crazy song I heard in a dream the night before. Then the bus jolted, and I saw Maria waiting by the stop, I guessed so she could find out about the dog. She looked so nervous standing there, and I was in such a good mood that I couldn’t help having a little fun with her. ‘You must really want those dentures,’ I grumbled as I stepped off the bus, and she almost passed out. But then I grinned and told her the dog was all right. And, I don’t know, we talked awhile. And it was like, it was like all the things that made us different, and these were endless, didn’t seem so important. What did was that we both needed a friend. Me especially.”

Rudi once more turned heads as she walked through the cafeteria that afternoon with her tray stacked high with food, even if it were for a different reason than before. The story of what she did for the dog must’ve spread around school. Because they were looking at her not in shock or in fear but with something approaching wonder and even warmth. Still, she again ignored it. She did until she again saw Tommy staring at her, with Darlene’s arm again around his.

Again, Rudi turned and hurried off, but she slowed when she noticed something else. Owen Connors was glaring at her from a table a short distance away, where he sat by himself, like he always did. Owen was the biggest and meanest kid in the school, though he’d been held back so many times that he was no longer much of a kid. He even had a receding hairline.

Everyone in school feared Owen, including the teachers and all the football players, who gave him a berth so wide it could’ve filled the sky. Tommy had been afraid of him from the first day of South Orange Junior High and had always kept his distance from him. But Rudi just glared back at him. She looked as if she could plow right through him as she headed to the back table, where excitedly sat Maria at one end and Eliot at the other, who quivered on sight of her while trying to make himself invisible.

Watching as Owen continued to glare at Rudi, Tommy felt a sensation he had never felt. He was frightened for someone.

Still feeling frightened for Rudi at the end of lunch, Tommy followed her out of the cafeteria while keeping a good distance behind her. She left at the same time as a skinny boy with a closely-cropped afro who’d transferred to the school a year earlier.

Like Rudi, Jared didn’t fit in, though for a different reason. He moved to the area from rural Georgia and spoke with what everyone thought was a funny accent. But what people really found strange about him was how he always dressed like he was in church, wearing long-sleeved dress shirts and dress pants and shiny black leather shoes. He wore this even when it was brutally hot outside, and he was always clutching a dogeared Bible, including in gym class, where he would do nothing more than sit by himself and read. To anyone at school who paid attention to him, he was a caricature who had come to life. One they could all too easily dismiss, including the teachers.

Rudi and Jared walked down a corridor, and they glanced at each other. Seeing how he was dressed and what he was carrying, Rudi looked as if she were about to glare at him like she had with Owen. But then she did something that again surprised Tommy. Despite seemingly having even less in common with Jared than what she had with Maria, Rudi did something that no one else in school had bothered to do. She looked under the caricature, and she noticed something she recognized. They both recognized this. It was all over their faces as they quickly turned away and rushed off in different directions.

Like at the end of the day before, Tommy exited the first-floor stairwell with lots of others, and with his head still spinning from that day’s math class.

In the hallway, he saw a crowd of people at the other end standing around Owen, who was holding a thick textbook high over someone’s head with a big grin on his face.

Having a pretty good idea of who this someone was, Tommy marched down the hall. He didn’t even think about what he was doing.

He reached the crowd, and again without thinking he pushed his way through it and found Rudi. She was facing Owen with a chemistry book under her arm and a look that was many stages past apathy. She seemed as if she were fighting the urge to fall asleep.

Still, Tommy felt a burst of rage, and he took a step toward Owen. Though he didn’t take another.

It wasn’t just the fear of Owen that stopped him. He even felt an overwhelming compulsion to fight him despite his fear. But he realized that getting beat up was the least that could happen to him. Fighting Owen, he knew, could’ve put him on a path from which he couldn’t get off.

“I’ll give you three seconds,” Rudi groaned without even looking at Owen. “One . . . two . . .”

Owen’s grin got bigger. “Three.”

Casually, Rudi dropped her seabag onto the floor. Just as casually, she took the chemistry book from under her arm and swung it across Owen’s jaw, knocking him headfirst into the lockers and onto the floor. With the thick textbook still in his hand, he lay there in a state of semiconsciousness, with the sound of dead silence roaring through the corridor. Tommy could hear his own heart beat.

Rudi turned to Eliot, who was standing nearby with his mouth and eyes as wide as they could be. “I suggest you pick up your book,” she told him. “Like, right now.”

“Thanks!” Eliot cried out as he rushed over to Owen and ripped the physics book out of his hand.

Seeing Eliot smile, Rudi pointed at him with a mix of a sneer and a snarl. “Now don’t think this means we’re friends or nothing.”

But Eliot just turned to Rudi and continued to smile. He smiled in defiance of her as he scurried down the corridor with the book under his arm.

Rudi sighed. She sighed while noticing her bag on the floor. Dropping to one knee to pick it up, she saw everyone staring at her in shock, and she glared at them. “What’s the matter with you people? Have you never seen anyone get their butt kicked? Go on, get out of here!”

Quickly, they dispersed. They moved as fast as they could. Everyone but Tommy, who stood in front of Rudi dumbfounded, not understanding how someone like her could care enough about someone like Eliot to stand up for him. Which made him wonder what else she could care about and especially who.

Rudi rose with her bag, and she saw Tommy staring at her, causing her to glare again. “What do you want?”

Tommy tried to come up with an answer. He tried and tried. “I . . . I was wondering, I was wondering if you could help me with calculus. Conic sections are just killing me. But even those ellipses inside those rhombuses are nothing compared to partial fractions.”

This made Rudi smirk as she put her hands on her hips. “So it’s true what they say. Boys really *are* bad at math.”

Tommy smirked too, and he was certain he was blushing.

Rudi started off.

Tommy knew he had to take a chance right then. He had to take it even if it meant making a fool of himself in front of someone who might not give a damn. “Please, I’ve never gotten anything lower than a B in my life, and I don’t know how I’m going to pass this class, let alone the AP exam.”

She stopped and turned toward him. “Why is it so important to you?”

“Don’t you fear failure?”

She didn’t answer, and the two just stared at each other while once more searching for words.

“Weiss!” howled the deep voice of a man from down the hall.

Rudi spun her head toward it, and she saw the red-faced principal, who was wearing a tight brown suit and an equally tight brown tie and who pointed inside his door. “My office, now!”

“*Oy vey,”* Rudi muttered as she started toward the man, who was trying hard to keep from smiling at the justice Rudi had just meted out to Owen. “Someone check if Mr. Connors is still alive,” he called out.

“Well?” Tommy said to Rudi. “Will you help me?”

Swinging her bag over her shoulder, Rudi noticed how the rope holding it together was badly frayed. “I’m kinda busy right now.”

“He’s alive!” a student yelled.

“Later?” Tommy wondered as Rudi continued toward the principal.

With another of her sighs, she came to another stop. “Where?”

“How about Reservoir? It’s a pizza place on—”

“—I’ll find it.”

Once more, she headed toward the principal and his office, with Tommy gazing at her. This was interrupted when a boy grabbed him by the shoulder from behind. “Coach wants to see everyone.”

Tommy shook his head. “Not today.”

“What do you mean?”

Not replying, Tommy hurried out of the school, where he again saw the red Porsche out front. A man in a leather jacket was leaning against the hood of it, with his arms crossed. This man was in his twenties, and he was lean and wiry and had his head shaved, with his neck covered in tattoos. But what stood out most was the cold, blank expression on his face and eyes that didn’t seem to blink at all.

Tommy had never seen anyone like him. Even Rudi looked benign in comparison. He was someone who only vaguely seemed human.

In a pizzeria on South Orange Avenue, Tommy sat at a table by himself and glumly glanced at his watch.

Noticing how the sun was setting in the window beside him, he couldn’t help think he’d been stood up. Never in his life had this happened to him, but this would’ve been the only time it would’ve mattered.

He waited another ten minutes and reached behind himself for his jacket. This was when he saw Rudi strut inside the door. With a big smile, he spun toward a waiter not far away and nodded his head.

The man smiled and nodded back, and he rushed inside the kitchen doors as Rudi came up to Tommy’s table.

He couldn’t think of what to say to her, so he just blurted out the first thing that popped into his head. “Did you get into trouble?”

She shrugged. “I got detention. It won’t be the last time.”

Again, the two stared at each other.

Seeing a chair across the table from Tommy, Rudi whipped it out and flipped it around, and she plopped herself down while dropping her bag onto the floor. But she didn’t take off her coat, and she snarled at him. “This is not a date.”

“Of course not,” he muttered while trying to convince himself of this, and he noticed that she seemed disappointed and questioned whether this was on his face as well.

“I wonder what your girlfriend would think about this.”

“Girlfriend?”

“The strawberry-blonde who’s always draped over you,” Rudi howled in exasperation. “*Ms. Cantor*.”

“She’s not my girlfriend. She might think so, and my mom definitely thinks so, but . . .”

“But what?”

“I really don’t know why I’m telling you this, but would you believe I’ve never had a girlfriend?”

“No.”

Tommy chuckled. “Don’t get me wrong. There have been girls. Lots of them. Sometimes too many. It’s the ‘friend’ part that’s elusive.”

“We’re quibbling over semantics, over what constitutes a girlfriend. And just what does in your opinion?”

Tommy knew. He knew exactly. He wanted someone who’d make him feel like Cummings felt when he wrote “since feeling is first.” He wanted this badly. But he didn’t want to admit it even to himself, so he just demurred. “I don’t know.”

Her only response was to look at him unsurely.

“Where you from?” he asked.

“Lots of places,” she answered.

“Like?”

“Like Trenton or thereabouts.”

“What are you doing here?”

Overwhelmed with boredom, Rudi dropped her elbows onto the table, and she dropped her chin onto her fists. “I don’t know *what* I’m doing here.

Tommy grinned as he reached into his backpack. “Helping me with calculus.”

This surprised Rudi, who jumped up in her seat. “You were serious?”

“Why else would I ask you here?”

She didn’t answer, and he yanked out a big white book, sending a pair of others onto the floor.

Rudi glanced at one in particular and sneered. “You’re reading *The Catcher in the Rye?* I read that like in tenth grade.”

“Me too,” he said as he returned the two books to his backpack. “But I read it only enough to write an essay. This time I’ve been reading it for real.”

“Why?”

“I gather you’re not a fan.”

“Why should I care about some spoiled loser from the forties who’s whining about how he can’t get laid? What does that have to do with me and my life?”

Like in the school corridor, Tommy was wary of exposing too much of himself to her. But like then, he decided to take a chance. “That’s not what the book’s about. It’s about being alone, about being the only person in the whole world, the only one who thinks and feels like you. And being so scared because of this that you don’t even know if you want to live. Holden Caulfield, he isn’t some spoiled loser whining about how he can’t get laid. He’s you.”

Rudi crossed her arms, and she scowled. “Speak for yourself.”

“I am.”

Tommy could see fear building on Rudi’s face, and he couldn’t understand why. I think it was because she could no longer make herself believe that she was “so not him” and that she could have no more excuses for not caring about him.

The waiter came by. He slapped Tommy’s shoulder with one hand and with his other he placed a thin-crusted pie in the center of the table. “Here you go, bud. You need anything else?”

“How about a couple of Cokes?”

“You got it. Just give me a few.”

“Tommy!” came the heavily-accented voice of a man from the other side of the restaurant.

Both Tommy and Rudi turned their heads. They saw a heavyset old man in a suit that was way too small on him sitting beside a table with many receipts and other papers on top of it.

Tommy waved at him. “Mr. Agnellino!”

Mr. Agnellino nodded, and he glanced at Rudi. He did so askance before shaking his head and returning to his papers.

Ignoring this, Rudi turned back to Tommy. “Everyone knows you here.”

“My family’s been coming to this place since the thirties, back when it was in Newark by the old reservoir there. That’s where my dad grew up. Do you know he only bought a house in South Orange because they moved here?”

Noticing the pizza in front of him, Tommy nodded at it, which had mushrooms and red peppers. “I hope you don’t mind, I’m a . . .”

Again, Rudi became surprised. “A vegetarian?”

“You too?”

“I’ve never heard of a football player vegetarian.”

“I’ve never heard of a punk rock girl vegetarian.”

Ignoring the remark, Rudi took off her coat and pulled out a slice and blew on it.

“It’s the best pizza in the world,” he mentioned. “There’s nothing quite like it.”

She gave him a dirty look. “There’s nothing that isn’t like everything else.”

Despite saying this, as she took a small bite, she couldn’t hide how good it tasted and how this taste was exploding in her mouth. It was all over her face as she took more and more bites.

Tommy had never watched anyone eat before. He never had any reason to, and he wasn’t sure why he was doing so now. But he was amazed at how she made even the act of eating seem out of the ordinary. Everything she did was out of the ordinary, and a smile came over his face that he didn’t even realize was there.

“What?” she demanded.

“Nothing.”

With the pizza and the Cokes almost finished, Rudi pointed into the open calculus book in front of Tommy. “So, you see, there are only four variations of problems. You just have to recognize which and follow the pattern for solving it. You don’t even have to understand how you’re solving it.”

“Wow,” he mumbled. It was as if a curtain had been drawn that he didn’t even know was there.

Rudi looked up at a clock on the wall. “I gotta run.”

“Yeah,” he muttered while continuing to gaze at the problem in astonishment.

Rudi rose and put on her coat, and Tommy did the same while quickly stuffing his textbook into his backpack. Leaving some money on the table, he and Rudi slowly headed toward the front door, with Rudi carrying her seabag by its rope.

Like earlier, he tried to come up with something to say to her. Like then, he just said the first thing that popped into his head. “It’s amazing how easy you make calculus.”

“It *is* easy once you stop fearing it, which means it’s like anything else.”

The two reached the door, and Tommy reached for Rudi’s hand. But he stopped himself and opened the door for her.

Not quite appreciating the gesture, Rudi gave him another dirty look, and she growled what would become a recurring theme throughout her life. “I can open my own doors.”

Still, Tommy held the door open.

With an accentuated sigh, she stepped outside and swung her seabag over her shoulder. She swung it so hard that the rope broke and the bag fell to the ground, with most of its contents spewing all over the place. Making matters worse, there was a bit of a breeze, enough to blow her things around.

“*Oy vey!”* she cried out as she knelt on the sidewalk and hurriedly collected her belongings back into the bag.

Tommy noticed a balled-up piece of paper by his foot. He picked it up and uncrumpled it, and he saw something extraordinary. He saw himself in her drawing of him. Never had he seen anything like it. She had captured something no photograph or mirror had: the small boy trying to climb out from under the trappings, just to see what was out there. Even more remarkable than the drawing itself was how she could see things in him that he couldn’t see himself, and he stood in stunned silence as he stared at his likeness.

“That’s mine!” she hollered after she ripped the paper from him and rushed off with it and the bag in her other arm.

“Thank you.”

She came to a halting stop and spun toward him in fury. “Thank me for what?”

He pointed to the drawing.

Awkwardly, she hid it behind her back, with her face turning many shades of scarlet and vermillion. “It’s not you! It’s Lee Ving!”

“I don’t even know who that is.”

“You wouldn’t. They don’t play his music on *American Bandstand* or *America’s Top 10* or whatever garbage you watch.”

Tommy chuckled.

This only made her madder. “What’s-so-funny?”

“I didn’t know punk girls blush.”

This floored her. She took a step back and then another as she looked for a response that wouldn’t come.

“Or that they could make me blush,” he went on. “I didn’t know they read poetry and help bullied kids and stray dogs and . . . and jaded football players.”

Quickly, Rudi turned around, and she rushed down the block.

“How about lunch tomorrow in the cafeteria?” he called out.

Once more, Rudi stopped. But she didn’t turn around. I don’t think she dared. “You’d want to be seen with me?”

“I kinda do,” he answered. Though what he really wanted to say was: “I really do. I want this more than anything.” He wanted to scream this, but the only screaming he did was on the page of his journal.

“You shouldn’t,” she told him as she disappeared into the night.

“Who are you?” he whispered. Like the day before, he whispered this at a volume only he could hear and only barely.

This time Rudi interrupted the story, by telling me she was far more concerned about where she was than who. She was lost.

“Why was that?” I asked. “Why didn’t you just walk back the way you came?”

“Let’s just say my mind was elsewhere.”

“And where was that?”

Rudi sighed. “It was trying to figure out what he was seeing when I couldn’t see it myself.”

Rudi was so lost that it took her twice as long to get back to the school than from it. At the bus stop on Valley not far from this, she stood and waited. Then she heard a sound.

Turning toward the school parking lot, she saw Eliot get into a beat-up Cutlass. “What are you still doing here?”

He grinned. “Chess Club.”

“Figures.”

“You do know that there are no more buses tonight?”

“What?”

“They stopped running a while ago.”

“That’s just great.”

With lots of exasperation, Rudi started down Valley.

“I could give you a ride,” Eliot called out.

She shook her head. “That’s all right. I live in a bad neighborhood. You wouldn’t want to go there.”

“Where’s that?”

“Near Irvington.”

“I live *in* Irvington.”

Eliot made a hard left turn, and the big car lumbered in that direction.

“My dad used the address of a buddy of his at work so I could register at Columbia,” he told Rudi. “I guess he’s under the impression that I could be somebody.”

“What’s so crazy about that?”

“Come on, look at me.”

“I am looking at you.”

Seeing something else, Rudi pointed down the road. “Just park behind that blue sedan.”

He did, and she opened her door. “Thanks.”

“Sure. Anytime.”

She stepped outside, where she paused. She paused for a long time. “I’ll see you tomorrow.”

“Tomorrow?” he wanted to know.

“At lunch.”

Eliot couldn’t hide his excitement. “Really?”

“Just don’t push it.”

Tommy walked inside the school the next day, and he saw Rudi standing outside the girls’ bathroom.

“You have to come out sometime,” she hollered.

“No, I don’t,” came Maria’s frightened voice from inside the bathroom.

“You look great.”

Like in Poetry class on her first day, Rudi must’ve felt someone’s eyes on her. Because she slowly turned to Tommy and saw him smiling at her, and she couldn’t help smile back just a little.

Rudi walked through the center of the cafeteria with her big pile of food, with no one paying her much attention. Tommy, who was a short distance behind her and walking toward his usual table with his own lunch, could see the curiosity on her face as she glanced left and right.

She only discovered the reason for the lack of interest in her when she approached the table where Owen sat by himself, with his head on his arms and a barrage of paper balls hitting him from all directions.

Stopping beside his table, Rudi watched this. Tommy stopped and watched too. He couldn’t imagine what she was doing.

Suddenly, she sighed. “That’s enough.”

The assault continued. So Rudi repeated her command, louder and firmer, and the paper balls ceased at once.

With another sigh, she sat across from Owen and started softly talking to him.

Tommy was now past curious. So he sat at a table across the aisle from them.

“You just need better karma,” Rudi told Owen. “I’ve been looking for it myself. The truth is I need it more than you. It’s not even close.”

Owen didn’t react at all.

“Come on,” she went on, “lift up that chin.”

“So you can punch it?”

“Better karma. I need *better* karma.”

Slowly, Owen raised his head, and she grinned at him a little. Reluctantly, he grinned back. But this turned into a chuckle when Eliot brought his lunch next to Rudi, with his hair much like hers, jet-black and spiked.

With her own chuckle, Rudi unspiked Eliot’s hair with her fingers. “What part of ‘don’t push it’ did you not understand? You look like a Quincy Punk.”

“What’s a Quincy Punk?” Eliot asked.

“A fake punk,” Owen told him, “like on that stupid TV show.”

Rudi turned to Owen in surprise. “You’re into punk?”

With another grin, Owen removed the long-sleeve plaid shirt he was wearing, exposing the white T-shirt underneath it and the Black Flag logo tattooed on his arm.

Eliot leaned toward it in awe. “Cool. Maybe I’ll get one of those.”

Both Owen and Rudi giggled, and he said to her: “We’re creating a monster.”

Watching all this was not only Tommy but Maria as she walked to their table with her tray. Or someone who looked like Maria apart from a little makeup and a lot of confidence. Everyone could see both, including a tall redheaded girl who walked past her and smiled.

Maria smiled back, which was still on her face as she sat across from Eliot. “I’d get a tattoo too. But my dad’s gonna kill me enough when he sees this makeup.”

“If you’d like,” Rudi told her, “I could put some on him too.”

All four of them laughed. They laughed like they’d been friends forever and not just because of some crazy-looking girl from Trenton. At the same time, Rudi noticed Jared eating a few tables away, with only his Bible to keep him company. He looked so lonely and was looking right at them, no matter how hard he tried to pretend otherwise.

Tommy could see that Rudi was trying to ignore him. But she couldn’t do it for long, and she waved him toward their table with a big sweep of her arm.

Shocked, Jared meekly pointed to himself. “Me?”

“Yes, you!” she called back with no meekness at all.

Hesitantly, he stood up and made his way to them, with his shock increasing with every step.

Realizing that Rudi wasn’t going to let anyone eat lunch alone as long as she was around, Tommy rose with his tray, and he stepped toward their table. Rudi turned to him as he did, and the two stared at each other once more, with everyone at the table turning toward him.

Feeling embarrassed, Tommy walked off.

“What’s going on with you and Tommy Goodwin?” Maria demanded.

“Would you believe partial fraction decomposition?” Rudi replied.

“No.”

Tommy smiled. He smiled all the way to his table.

Tommy was again smiling at the end of the day. He just aced a partial fractions quiz, and he expected Rudi would once more be doing something outrageous, something that would again awe him.

But as he exited the stairwell on the first floor with lots of others, he noticed there was no Rudi or any kind of commotion or disturbance. Everything seemed eerily normal. This continued as he walked through the front doors of the building.

The normalness ceased once he was outside, where he saw Rudi and the wiry man with the shaved head and tattooed neck from the day before. He saw them arguing by his Porsche.

“I’m not going anywhere with you!” she howled with a face full of fright.

The man paused. He paused and slapped her across the face with the back of his hand, with a cold-bloodedness that made Tommy think that this was the least he could do to her. The blow knocked her backward and almost off her feet.

Tommy took a step toward them. But like with Owen the day before, he froze. He froze when he saw a handgun in the man’s waist. He saw not just this but his future. He saw the frail boy sitting on his bed waiting to die.

The man grabbed Rudi by her ear, and he dragged her toward his car. “I know exactly what you want. We both know it!”

“Deke!” she cried out in pain.

He didn’t respond. He just threw open the passenger door and tossed Rudi inside, and he slammed the door shut. Stepping around the Porsche, he noticed Tommy, and he scowled at him as he jumped into the car and sped off. He sped out of the parking lot and down Parker.

Tommy wasn’t sure what to do. A big part of him wanted to do nothing. It wanted him to remain in control of his fate and the replay of his life. So, long after Deke’s car had left, he was still standing there.

“Do nothing,” he told himself over and over. “Do nothing.”

But the other part of him, the stronger part, woke, and he rushed to his bike and raced it down Parker. He raced it to the end of it.

The Porsche was still nowhere in sight, but he kept going forward by veering right onto Clinton. He continued on this, and he reached the intersection of Sandford, where he stopped and noticed that, a handful of blocks away, was Springfield Avenue, one of the main thoroughfares in the area. He still couldn’t see Deke’s car anywhere, but he turned onto Sanford anyway.

At the corner of Springfield, he looked down the busy street in both directions. In the distance to his right, he saw the Porsche, and he sped toward it. He did without looking, in the path of an oncoming car.

Quickly, he turned his bike, just missing the car, but now he was heading for a parked one. He swerved around this, causing him to jump the sidewalk, where he avoided a trio of pedestrians and jumped the bike back onto the street and followed the Porsche. He followed it through a maze of roads that looked much the same and came to a rundown section of Maplewood he had never seen. This was only a fifteen-minute drive from the neighborhood he had lived his entire life, but it was so different that it might as well have been on the moon.

The Porsche came to a sharp stop in front of a small and crumbling single-story home, with Tommy parking behind an old brown pickup truck about a block and a half back.

He waited. He waited so long that he lost track of time.

Hurriedly and with her face soaked in fear, Rudi burst out of the car. Even more hurriedly, she slammed the car’s door shut and ran into the house while the Porsche took off, exposing the blue sedan that had been parked in front of it.

Again, Tommy wasn’t sure what to do. Still, he got off his bike and headed down the street toward her house. Slowly, he headed, with each step moving slower.

In front of the building, he hesitated for a moment, but he stepped up to the house’s door. There was no doorbell, so he knocked. He knocked a couple of times. He even banged on the door with his fist while calling out Rudi’s name.

Only silence came in return. So he returned to the street and headed to his bike. But as he reached the side of the house, he noticed a backyard behind it, and he found himself moving toward it.

I was confused and asked Rudi how she couldn’t hear Tommy.

“I wasn’t there,” she told me. “I was so frightened when I ran into that house. It seemed the walls were caving in on me, and I was looking for a way out. So I ransacked the place looking for one. I ripped it apart. But I couldn’t even find a bottle of aspirin. So I did what I did when I was little. I hid under the bed. I also cranked Richard Hell on my Walkman. I cranked it so loudly that I wouldn’t’ve heard a hurricane.”

“Rudi?” Tommy called out as he walked alongside a cracked wall of the house, which looked as if it would fall apart if touched.

Like before, there was no response. But he heard something coming from inside the house. So he repeated himself, doing so louder.

This was when he heard another something: a clicking sound. Spinning toward it, he saw the man who’d been walking Rudi to school on her first day. The one with the crewcut and pockmarked face, who was pointing a gun at his head.

Tommy raised his hands in surrender.

“You one of them?” the man growled.

Tommy tried to keep himself from shaking as he tried to come up with an answer. “One of what?”

The man didn’t answer him back. Instead, he carefully looked Tommy over. With his eyes locked on him, he reached inside his jacket and pulled out a badge, which he showed him. “FBI. Take off while you can.”

Tommy hurried away, and he hurried more once he got to the street. He kept hurrying after he reached his Harley. Quickly, he jumped on it and sped down the road. He wanted to speed all the way home. He even told himself that this was where he was going. But somehow he ended up in front of the Maplewood Public Library on Baker Street, and he turned onto its lot and parked.

While sitting on his bike and staring into space, Tommy realized that whatever trouble Rudi was in, whatever reason she had for coming into his life, it had to be big. Why else would the FBI be involved? The other thing he knew was that the only means of discovering this was in the building beside him.

So he got off the bike, and he marched up the ramp and into the building. He marched all the way to the Reference section. In the days before the web, there was only one way to find out about a recent event: the *Reader’s Guide to Periodical Literature*, which indexed stories from hundreds of magazines and journals.

He asked a librarian where these were, and the man directed him to an aisle where he found stacks of thick volumes of the guide going back decades. At the end of the aisle there were smaller versions of the more recent editions. He pulled the last few months off the shelves and took them to a nearby table, and he skimmed through them.

He went through page after page and volume after volume. But he didn’t know what was looking for, so he was getting nowhere. With the sun setting through the windows all around him, he was ready to give up.

*Like Trenton or thereabouts*.

Remembering what Rudi had told him at dinner the night before, Tommy flipped to the back of the volume he was looking through and searched for “Trenton.” He found nothing, so he checked the rest of the volumes. In one from October, he came across a *Newsweek* article entitled “Punk Rock Turns Deadly.”

Quickly, he rushed to the magazine stacks near the front entrance of the library, and he found and grabbed the issue. Turning its pages, he reached the article, where to his shock he saw under the headline a mugshot of Deke.

According to the story, a nineteen-year-old Jewish student from Rutgers named Mark Shapiro had been beaten to death at a punk show outside Trenton. Deke Cox, who was a well-known drug dealer in the area and a ex-con with ties to the Aryan Brotherhood, was the leading suspect of what authorities strongly believed was a racially-motivated crime. Though he hadn’t been charged and wasn’t the only suspect. An unnamed teenaged girl with a similar background was believed to be involved in the killing as well.

Tommy knew that the “unnamed teenage girl” could only be one person, and he lowered both his head and the magazine. “She *is* a monster.”

“That, that’s all there is for today,” I mumbled to Rudi as I put the last page of the journal on the table.

She didn’t say anything, so I asked her if she was all right.

Again, she didn’t reply, and I told her: “Like I said before, I could skip—”

“—I want to hear every word.”

“Well, I don’t think you should. It was bad enough going through this the first time.”

“Every word,” she hollered with a fury unchanged in forty years.

“No.”

“You can’t do this,” she screeched with her voice breaking. “He was my *bashert*. My *destiny*. You can’t hold him back from me.”

“That’s exactly what I gonna do.”

“Don’t think because you’re off somewhere in the middle of nowhere that I can’t find you. I will. You know I will. One way or another, you’re gonna tell me everything he wrote. I’ll know if you skip a comma.”

Now it was my turn not to say anything.

“Call me tomorrow as soon as you get his letter,” she uttered matter-of-factly as she hung up.

I kept sitting in the booth, staring at the pages in front of me and unsure of what to do. I don’t even know how long I did this and only stopped when Katie came through the gates of the shelter.

A slender woman in her mid-twenties, like some other women in the shelter, she was working at an Amazon fulfillment center down the hill in San Bernardino. All of them seemed to work crazy hours, including in the middle of the night.

“Hey,” I said to her as she approached me and the building.

She replied in kind, and I noticed how scared she looked.

“Is everything all right?”

She nodded unconvincingly and rushed into the building.

Like the night before, I collected Tommy’s pages and put them in the envelope, and I went into the building myself so I could go through my nightly ritual with Josh. Like always, I had to wait, but for a different reason than usual. Josh was talking behind his closed door to Katie, who was looking more scared than before. Her hand was shaking as she reached into her back pocket and pulled out some cash, which she offered to Josh, who ripped it from her hand and counted every bill. He counted them twice.

the third night

Like the morning before, I brought my cup of green tea to the corner booth in the courtyard, where Nicole and Allison were again huffing down coffee and cigarettes. Though as I sat with them, I noticed they weren’t so upbeat.

“I can’t believe she would leave like that,” Allison said as she shook her head.

“Who left?” was my question.

“Katie,” Nicole answered. “She left in the middle of the night.”

“Why?” was my next question. One with lots of surprise.

“She was gone when we woke up,” Allison replied, “along with all her things.”

“You have no idea why she would leave?” Nicole asked Allison.

“The only thing I know is that she got that job at Amazon. She seemed real excited about it and the possibility of getting out of here.”

“Maybe that’s what she did,” I interjected. “She got out of here.”

Allison again shook her head. “She would’ve said something, or at least texted us. She wouldn’t’ve just left like that.”

“She’s the third woman who’s done that since I’ve been here,” Nicole told me. “A few weeks ago it was Jill.”

Allison nodded. “Before that it was Michelle.”

Over the years, I had seen and heard my share of terrible things, and I thought I had become numb to them. Nothing, no matter how bad it was, ever seemed to shock or unnerve me or upset me in the least. But for some reason I wasn’t numb to this, and I couldn’t understand why. It was as if something had awoken in me.

“Do we have everything for the party?” Allison whispered to Nicole as she tried to change the subject.

“Everything but the cake.”

“Josh said last night that he’d get it for us.”

“He did?”

“He said he gets a veteran’s discount at the bakery near his house.”

I was still thinking about Katie on the buses to work. On the second, there was only one passenger other than Matt and I. A middle aged woman sitting way in the back, who was ranting about her gay son in Palm Springs to the driver way up front.

While trying to ignore both the loudness and the inanity of their conversation, I turned to Matt. “Have you heard about these women disappearing from the shelter?”

He shrugged. He did in a way that made me say, “You know what’s going on, don’t you?”

Now he turned from me. “Just forget about it. There’s nothing you can do about it, and it’s not even the worst thing that’s happened there.”

“We should tell someone.”

“Tell who? Do you think anyone cares about us? To most people, we’re garbage, no better than cons. I’m one of those too, by the way.”

“But—”

“—Just forget about it, if you want to keep a roof over your head this winter, not to mention your job.”

“What do you mean?”

“Right before you came to the shelter, there was this young guy. He couldn’t have been much older than twenty. But he already had a wife and a bunch of kids. During one of the random cubby checks, they found an empty Grolsch bottle in his. You know, the kind with the fancy ceramic caps. He found it in the street somewhere and picked it up because he thought it was cool looking. But they said it was proof he’d been drinking. It was all the proof they needed to kick him out. So tell me, if they’d kick out that guy and his wife and all those little kids and send them into the streets over absolutely nothing, what do you think they’d do to someone who made the slightest tremor in the water? And don’t think you’d be able to hold this job while you’re on the streets. You won’t.”

“But—”

“—Keep your mouth shut and follow the advice of that penguin in *Madagascar*. ‘Just smile and wave. Smile and wave.’”

I wiped the sweat off my forehead with the back of my hand as I reached the third floor of the motel staircase with my mop, which I dropped into the yellow pail of water waiting for me on the landing while I caught my breath. It had been a long day, and I still had to mop two more staircases before my shift ended in a half hour.

I was exhausted and in many ways. Here I was over fifty, running around and doing the kind of job I had as a teenager, and I wondered if I’d be doing it forever. I wondered if I’d be stuck in this awful place, with all the awfulness surrounding it. Most of all, I wondered why I was doing this.

Not finding an answer, I wanted to quit right then. I wanted to toss the mop and pail down the stairs and run out of the building and the town.

Only fear prevented this. The fear of what I felt every morning before dawn and what I had felt all day before I got a job. I especially feared the only cure for it. So I knew I had to keep the job, if only to keep myself going. I had to do what Matt had told me, no matter how much I wanted to do the opposite.

My shift ended, but I still had time before the first bus came. So I took my bagged lunch into the conference room and turned on the light, where I saw I wasn’t alone. Alaya was sitting on the floor in the corner of the room, gazing into her phone with tears in her eyes.

“I’m sorry,” I gasped.

Embarrassed, she jumped to her feet and ran out of the room while wiping her eyes.

I called out her name, but she kept running.

All afternoon I tried to make sense of what I had seen in the conference room, not just on the buses but on the long walk to the shelter. I was in such a haze that I forgot it was Friday and was only reminded of it when I saw Rich and his merry band of volunteers preparing dinner in the kitchen, which was something that made me forget everything else.

The shelter employed a full-time cook, whose meals were as unpleasant as she was. All week I looked forward to Fridays and Saturdays, her days off. On them, Rich would come in and turn the same ingredients we ate every night into gourmet meals with multiple courses while treating everyone who walked into the kitchen as if they were guests at the finest Michelin-starred restaurant. He was so good at what he did that I’m sure he could’ve worked at any restaurant in Southern California on the weekends and been well paid for it. But instead he and the others chose to gift this time to us.

This was driven by faith. A faith they kept to themselves. I was only aware of it because Rich would softly play the local Christian rock station on a portable stereo while they worked, which I knew well from a recent stint at a Pentecostal workcamp in the forests of Lytle Creek, as it was the only one we were allowed to listen to. All day it would torture me by playing the same dozen songs, with the songs repeating the same phrases over and over. But now I didn’t mind it so much.

I’d become friendly with Rich during the months I spent at the shelter, despite our many differences. Other than the odd love we shared for *Jesus Christ Superstar*, we didn’t have much in common and couldn’t agree on much, and we would often argue over the issues of the day and over plenty of theological ones too. But these arguments were always congenial and always accompanied by smiles on our faces. He was one of the many Evangelicals I’d come to know and love in my years circling oblivion. He was one of the majority of them: people who, like the rest of us, weren’t perfect but were good. They were good people trying to make the world a little better, and that’s not so bad.

I talked with Rich for a few minutes and took my meal of spiced tonnarelli and vegetables outside into the courtyard, and I stopped at a booth where an elderly man was eating by himself.

“*Sergei Alexandrovich*,” I said to him, “*mogu li prisoedinit’sya k vam?”*

Sergei grinned and nodded toward the seat in front of him. “*S udovol’stviyem*.”

I joined Sergei, who was another volunteer at the shelter, after being one of its clients a few years earlier. Like Rich, Sergei was quite different from me, and not just because of where he was from. Every day he wore a different Donald Trump T-shirt. He must’ve had dozens of them, at the least. He even had Trump socks, and I cringed to think what he wore under his jeans. But I liked him anyway, especially because he tolerated my pidgin Russian.

The Russian language is a lot like the Czech I learned from my grandparents. But it’s different enough that I have trouble speaking it well. Still, unlike many Russians I’ve known, Sergei would let me speak to him in it. Maybe he just had a longing to converse in his mother tongue, no matter how terrible it was spoken.

That night, Sergei was listing to a Vysotsky song on his phone while he ate. Vladimir Vysotsky was kind of a Russian Bob Dylan or Leonard Cohen, with maybe a splattering of Lou Reed thrown in. The similarities between the four went beyond their style of music or its subject matters. Like those three, Vysotsky was Jewish, and like them, he may not have had a perfect voice. But it didn’t matter. He sang with a soul that was all you heard.

Sergei had once told me that the songs had helped him through the gulags in the 1970s, even at times when he could only listen to his memories of them. That night, I could see on his face just what the music meant to him.

The song he was listening to came to an end, and I asked him if he could play “Koni priveredlivye,” and he smilingly obliged. This was Vysotsky’s most famous song. I’ve seen the title translated into English as either “Fastidious Horses” or “Capricious Horses,” but neither feels right, and I’m not sure if it can be translated correctly. I certainly can’t. But the title matters little.

The song is about someone driven to his death by forces he’s both feeding and unable to control. “Slow down a little!” he screams at the horses he’s lashing forward. “Slow down!” But they don’t slow. They don’t listen to him at all as they carry him off to the abyss.

I’ve loved the song from the first time I heard it. Mikhail Baryshnikov danced to it in the film *White Nights*. Every version of it I’ve heard since is somehow different, but none moved me like the one I heard in the courtyard. Maybe it was because I realized that the lyrics were about a lot of us at the shelter. This included not only me but perhaps Sergei. He was crying at the end of it, and I felt like it too.

Josh was off that night. Some new guy named Bob was working in his place, and I could feel the lack of stress in the line as we waited to check in. I got Tommy’s latest letter from him without hassle, and I called Rudi from the corner booth.

“I’m sorry,” she said when she picked up.

“For what?” I asked as I pulled out the letter’s contents.

“For getting angry at you last night.”

“It’s all right. But I still don’t think you should be going through this again.”

“But you’re going to tell me anyway.”

“But I’m going to tell you anyway.”

On the morning after reading the magazine article, Tommy felt the same sickness he had before. It hadn’t let up at all, but he had no more idea what to do about it than he had then. So he just avoided Rudi that day. He went to school late and didn’t even go to lunch, spending the hour hiding in the school’s library.

But he couldn’t avoid her in Calculus class. Before it started, he sat in his usual front-row seat and stared into space as everyone streamed inside, and he wondered how he’d react when he saw her. Would he scream and curse? Would he demand an explanation?

Neither, he decided. She killed a Jew or had something to do with it. There could be no rationalization of it, no excuse for it. He’d never speak to her again or even look at her. He told himself this twice and repeated it once more.

The bell rang, and Rudi stammered into the classroom, and she nervously smiled at him a little. He could tell she was still shaken from what had happened the day before with Deke.

Ignoring this, or pretending to, Tommy kept staring straight ahead. But he couldn’t hide his disgust. He knew it was all over his face.

Through the corner of his eyes, he could see her surprise as she headed toward the back of the room, along with something else. He saw hurt. It was all over her face, and this surprised him.

How could you hurt a monster? he asked himself.

All he knew was that he had.

The next day Tommy tried a different approach. He acted as if Rudi had never come into his life. At lunch he was again listening to his friends’ dumb jokes and was telling some. He even smiled at Darlene as she held onto his arm, and he tried to feel the slightest anything toward her.

Darlene smiled back when she saw this, which turned into a smirk when she saw who was standing a few steps away. She smirked and wrapped her arm around his, wrapping it like a snake.

Tommy turned, and he saw Rudi glaring at him. Though this couldn’t hide the same hurt he saw the day before. The other thing he noticed was that her tray of food had almost nothing on it.

“What is your problem?” bellowed Joey from the other end of the table.

Rudi glanced at him before marching off.

“That’s right, keep walking, loser,” Joey called out to her. “Not all of us are scared of you or that sucker punch you threw. I’d really like to see you try that with me.”

Rudi continued ignoring him and kept marching, but she slowed as she reached Beth, who was walking past her with her head down. Coming to a stop, Rudi turned back to her while looking as if there was something about the girl she found familiar.

“Leibniz has often been attacked for arguing in *Theodicy* that we live in ‘the best of all possible worlds,’” Tommy’s Western Philosophy teacher told the class that afternoon, “most famously and brutally by Voltaire in *Candide*.”

Tommy was barely listening. He was going through the motions, like he’d been doing in all his classes.

“But is this fair?” the teacher went on. “After all, he wasn’t saying we live in a perfect world. A man smart enough to discover calculus surely must’ve seen that it wasn’t. What he was saying was that it’s not possible to imagine a world that’s better than what we’ve got. If you don’t believe me, try conjuring one yourself. I bet you can’t do it, and it’s because of free will. The only way to improve the world we have and remove all the suffering and ugliness is by eliminating free will. It’s the reason bad things happen. But it’s also what brings us joy and the infinite possibilities. The possibilities that every next moment brings. Just as importantly, if we could eliminate the bad things from happening, we’d never appreciate the good or realize how precious each of our finite moments are. We have life too, and everything that makes it worth living: poetry and music and art. We have love. And let’s not forget we also have Pink Bubblegum Ice Cream at Baskin Robbins this month.”

Many in the class chuckled. Tommy didn’t, but he was at least listening, for real this time, and that was something. Maybe he was thinking about those infinite possibilities. Maybe he was thinking about one in particular, no matter how impossible it may have seemed.

Tommy got home late from school. He was so lost in his thoughts that he couldn’t remember driving home. He only came out of this when he stepped through his front door and saw his mother watching an old movie on the TV in the living room.

A year earlier, she would’ve never been doing this in the middle of the day. But it wasn’t unusual anymore. It seemed as if she had given up living. She even made out her will. Apart from that, the only things he’d see her do was listen to Julie London or watch old movies or go shopping. These were her only places she could escape, back to before the summer and from everything that came after it.

Tommy noticed that she was watching *Miracle on 34th Street*. Having nothing better to do, he leaned against the wall in the hallway and watched some with her. He watched the part where Santa speaks Dutch with the little refugee girl, and he watched the two sing a Christmas song together. During the latter, he saw his mother was crying.

This was also out of character for her. Even during that awful summer, he didn’t see her cry. She didn’t cry even when he was doing it all the time. Tommy thought of his mother as so hard, that nothing could get to her, much like that someone else he knew. But even she was human, just like that someone else.

I was curious about that someone else and what she was doing during all this. So I asked her.

“I wasn’t doing anything,” she grumbled, but this was a bit of an exaggeration.

Rudi convinced herself that Tommy’s sudden change toward her didn’t matter and that she had even expected it. Though she couldn’t deny the funk she was in and that all the air had come out of her balloon. There was only one thing she could do to inflate it: go to the animal hospital and see the dog she’d helped rescue.

The dog would always brighten her day. Visiting her was like stepping inside a flashlight. Despite all the pain and misery that dog must’ve been feeling, she would go crazy with joy when she saw Rudi and wouldn’t stop licking her.

“You better be careful,” the vet said to Rudi one afternoon as she passed her holding and caressing the napping pup in her lap. “You’ll get attached.”

Rudi shook her head. “It’s too late for that. No one’s claimed her yet?”

“Not yet.”

“How much longer does she have to stay here?”

“A few more weeks, at least. Fortunately, that young man, the one you brought her here with, paid for three months of care.”

“He did?”

“He’s pretty nice.”

Rudi shrugged.

“He’s pretty handsome too.”

“I hadn’t noticed,” Rudi insisted, perhaps a little strongly.

The woman grinned. “I’ll see you tomorrow, Rudi.”

Rudi mostly visited the dog by herself, but a few times she went with Maria. Then one afternoon she went with someone else.

While waiting for the bus in front of the school with lots of others, Owen came up to the stop. The two nodded at each other and exchanged heys, and both turned toward the road.

“Is everything okay?” he asked.

“Sure.”

“Where you heading?”

“The animal hospital.”

“You sick?”

Rudi grinned, in spite of herself. “I’m going to see a dog.”

“Yeah, I heard about that.”

“Where you heading?”

“Nowhere. Home, I guess.”

“You wanna come with me?”

The dog licked Owen’s hand. She licked it over and over while wagging her tail.

“She likes me,” he muttered with surprise.

“Dogs can tell when someone’s nice,” Rudi explained.

“No one’s ever called me that.”

“I know what that’s like.”

“I wonder if she’d be licking me if she knew about my record.”

“She doesn’t seem to care about mine.”

“I guess we have a lot in common, other than that you’re smart.”

“You’re not so dumb.”

“I got held back in fifth grade. More than once.”

“That still doesn’t mean you’re dumb.”

“Everyone thinks I’m dumb, even my dad. He wants me to drop out and get a job.”

“What do you want?”

“I don’t know. I’d really like to succeed at something. But it’s not so easy.”

“Why?”

“I don’t read so good.”

“I could help you.”

“You’d do that?”

“Someone once helped me. We all need help now and then.”

“I wouldn’t think you ever needed help.”

“You’d be wrong.”

Tommy returned to the same loathing he’d felt before meeting Rudi, of everything around him, especially himself, and he wondered if he’d ever feel anything else. Until one day he could.

While wandering a hallway in between classes, he saw Rudi doing likewise, in the direction of Joey, who was arguing with Beth, much like they’d been doing lately. Though it was louder and more animated than normal, and Tommy could see panic on Beth’s face. He saw not only this but that one of her eyes seemed swollen.

He wasn’t the only one who saw this. As Rudi reached the pair, she gazed at the girl and at Joey, who growled, “Keep walking, loser.”

She did. She walked off as if she didn’t care.

At the same moment, Beth tried to rush off. But Joey grabbed her arm, and he raised his at her. “You’re still not listening to me! But you will!”

This was when Rudi came to a halt, and she turned around and marched up to Joey, stopping right behind him. “I’d really like to see you try that with me.”

Grunting, Joey swung the back of his hand at her.

Rudi ducked, and he hit a locker and screamed in pain. This caused him to let go of Beth, who fled down the hallway. So frantic was she to get away that she didn’t see Jared exit a stairway, and she ran right into him.

“I’m so sorry,” he called out in fright.

She didn’t reply. But she looked into his eyes and calmed as she scurried off.

Tommy turned back to Rudi and Joey, who cocked his fist back with his face bright red. “Let’s see you miss this one.”

“There’s not gonna be a next one,” she told him before swinging her leg into his grown, sending him to the floor squealing in pain.

“WHY?” Tommy wrote in big letters when describing this in his journal. It made no sense to him, especially when he remembered how Beth had been snickering at Rudi on her first day of school. But it makes sense to me. Rudi wasn’t doing it for Beth. She was doing it for everyone like her, everyone who couldn’t fight back, and that included herself.

Coldly, Rudi stood over Joey with her hands on her hips as he squirmed on the floor. “It’s not so fun when the girl hits back, is it?”

He didn’t answer her and continued to squirm.

“Next time I won’t be so nice,” she added, and she wandered off while again looking like she didn’t care.

But she wasn’t fooling Tommy, and he could no longer fool himself.

Tommy parked his bike in the school lot the next morning, and he noticed Rudi in the distance approaching the school.

He sat and watched her. He watched as she passed him without looking at him, and he watched her enter the school.

He didn’t follow. He waited outside, for what he didn’t know. Only after the bell for first period had rung did he enter the school. Not even bothering to go to his locker, he went straight to his first-period computer class, where outside its open door he saw everyone punching cards as usual.

Sighing, he walked off. He walked down the hall and down the stairwell to the second floor, and he walked down that corridor, knowing exactly where he was walking to. As he got close to the classroom, he heard Ms. Krasner’s voice. “I was actually impressed by a few of your poems.”

Tommy walked up to the open door, and he saw Rudi slouching in the back row with her arms crossed as the teacher handed papers to the class.

“Of course, there was some substandard work,” the woman remarked as she stepped up to Rudi with a frown and with one last page in her hand.

Rudi lowered her eyes.

“But this wasn’t one of those,” the teacher went on as she placed the poem in front of Rudi.

Surprised, Rudi lifted her eyes. With even more surprise, she gazed at the “A+” written on top of the page.

Krasner pointed at the poem and did so with a smile. “I didn’t want to like this, but you gave me no choice. You know, it’s really too bad Cummings died before you were born. I think he would’ve found you a kindred soul. A fellow punk.”

The teacher nodded toward the blackboard behind her. “Would you mind if I shared this with the class?”

Rudi shrugged, and the woman took the poem to the front of the class, where she wrote it on the backboard in her perfect script.

*So tall*

*But never reaches the floor.*

*So sure*

*But can’t say*

*what he wants:*

*Every kiss,*

*Every blush,*

*Every broken heart.*

*I wanna shout him inside out.*

*I wanna slam him through a wall!*

*I wanna make him see*

*what I see.*

*The what I see*

*when I see me.*

Krasner finished writing and turned back to Rudi, who turned toward away in embarrassment. She turned toward the door.

Like she had the last time Tommy had been standing there, she saw not only him but his shock, and this came over her face as well.

Stepping forward to discover what Rudi was gaping at, the teacher noticed Tommy. “Can I help you?”

Like the last time Tommy had been there, he ran off.

“It seems Ms. Weiss had some inspiration for her poem,” he heard Krasner’s voice echo through the classroom and into the hall.

Rudi broke the narrative. She did with a giggle.

So I had to ask. “What so funny?”

“That’s not exactly what she said. She said something like, ‘It seems Ms. Weiss had some inspiration for her poem. A very cute one.’”

Tommy didn’t sleep that night. He tossed himself around in his bed as he tried to make the words of Rudi’s poem disappear or at least not matter. But they kept pounding the inside of his head.

Why couldn’t a monster write something like that? he asked himself. Were they not capable of beauty?

He recalled the music class he took the year before. The teacher played Richard Wagner’s *Tristan and Isolde*, and he thought it was the most beautiful thing he had ever heard. But Wagner was a monster. He was a monster in the same exact way Rudi was.

By dawn, Tommy had come up with all the excuses he needed to believe that nothing had changed, and he had free will. But he rose to his waist and jumped off his bed and into the shower, and he knew just why he was doing this.

The garage door opened, exposing a silver Jaguar and a tan Mercedes convertible and the Harley parked between them. This sped onto the driveway along with Tommy and down Overhill Road. It sped all the way to Rudi’s house, where Tommy parked behind the old brown pickup truck and waited for Rudi. While he still wasn’t sure what he was going to say to her when she came out, he knew he had to say something.

He didn’t wait long. His bike was still warm when she and the FBI agent left the house and walked to the blue sedan parked in front of it, with Tommy noticing two things about her. The first was that she wasn’t wearing her coat despite it not exactly being warm out. But what he noticed more was how frightened she looked and how hard she was trying not to show it.

The sedan drove off, and Tommy followed it. Like when following Deke, he followed it a good distance back. He followed it down Springfield Avenue all the way to Downtown Newark. As the car reached the courthouse on Federal Square, it turned into a multilevel garage across the street while Tommy continued up the road and parked in a small lot on street level, where he again waited. He waited until he saw Rudi and the FBI agent leave the garage and cross the street toward the courthouse.

For the next few hours, Tommy waited some more, by the courthouse doors. With the midday sun beginning to burn brightly, Rudi exited the building with the FBI agent, along with a man with an expensive haircut and an even more expensive gray three-piece suit, with the three stopping at a short set of steps.

“After the grand jury finishes its work,” the man in gray told Rudi, “we won’t need you until the trial.”

“If I live that long,” she uttered as she marched down the stairs followed by the FBI agent, who was smirking at her the whole way to the garage.

The blue sedan came to a stop on Valley Road in front of Columbia. While it was still in motion, Rudi swung open her door and jumped out. Without even closing the door, she made her way to the school.

The FBI agent shut the door and left, and Tommy jumped the curb and rode over a small patch of grass to the parking lot, where he drove alongside Rudi.

She glanced at him, and again he saw the hurt.

“What do you want?” she growled.

“I’m sorry,” he told her as he idled the bike.

She continued toward the school.

“It’s just that,” he called out, “it’s just I’m Jewish.”

Suddenly, Rudi came to a halt. “What?”

“You’re testifying against Deke, aren’t you?”

Spinning toward Tommy, Rudi clenched her fists and raised them at him. “Have you been following me?”

“You know, ever since you got here, I thought . . . I thought I was trying to figure out who you were. But it’s me I’ve been figuring out.”

“And who are you?”

Tommy recited her poem. He recited it word for word, and he rode up to her and the surprise on her face. “I’m the guy in the picture you drew.”

He leaned toward her. This surprised her even more than the poem, and it scared her enough to step back.

“Or I want to be,” he mumbled.

Tentatively, she took a small step toward him, unsure of both herself and him, and while looking as if she were about to cry. “You made me feel so . . .”

“I’m sorry.” He said this as softly as he could.

Even more tentatively, she took another step toward him, and the two leaned toward each other, just as the bell inside the school rang.

“I wanna be anywhere but in class,” she whispered with a shake of her head.

“I know the best anywhere,” he whispered back.

Rudi stared into a waterfall from the rocks she and Tommy were sitting on in the South Mountain Reservation. “I met Deke in the hospital where I was sent to clean myself up. It seems like forever ago. I didn’t think much of him, but he was the one who gave me my name.”

Tommy turned to her in surprise. “What do you mean?”

“I was going by ‘Trudi’ back then. But he told me that nobody was ever afraid of a ‘Trudi.’”

“What’s your real name?”

“One that makes me chuck. Anyway, like I said, I didn’t think much of Deke, but I was bored. There was nothing going on but drugs, and even they were boring. So, after I got out of the hospital, I visited him at his house.”

Rudi paused. As she looked up from the water, she glanced at the endless trees surrounding it. “He was cranking ‘Blank Generation’ by Richard Hell on this big stereo on his front lawn. He played it over and over. It was so loud that I could hear it five blocks away.”

“That was the song you were singing on your first day of school, wasn’t it?” Tommy wondered.

“It’s my favorite. Listening to it is the only time I don’t feel alone. The only time I know there’s someone out there like me.”

“I like it too.”

Now Rudi was surprised. “You do?”

“Even if that was the only time I’ve heard it. It’s crazy, but I thought . . . I thought you were singing about me.”

Rudi returned her gaze to the water. “Deke then played the Buzzcocks and Iggy Pop and Jim Carroll, and I was hooked, worse than drugs. Sometimes I’d spend days there listening to records. He had hundreds of them. He even stole a copy of *The Decline of Western Civilization* and a projector. We watched that movie on his living room wall just about every night. Sometimes we’d run it all night. I know it so well that I can imitate every inflection on Lee Ving’s face when he sings.”

Raising her head, she added, “There was nothing but the music and how it made me feel like I could stomp over the world. I could tear apart walls. More than that it got me from each hopelessness.”

“You didn’t know Deke was a racist?” Tommy asked.

“Of course, I knew. I was raised on it. ‘Jews this, blacks that, yada, yada, yada.’ But it was always just talk and had nothing to do with me. So I went along with it. I never questioned it once. Not with my mom or my stepdad and especially not with Deke and his friends.”

The conversation fell quiet. They both went back to staring into the water while avoiding what they both knew they had to talk about. Until Tommy blurted out, “What about the kid that got killed?”

Rudi tried to answer. Though she had to close and open her eyes a number of times before she could get the words out. “Deke would sometimes put on shows in his house with local bands. I was also dealing for Deke, mostly at these shows. A couple of college kids showed up one night, and I sold them some weed. I started talking to one of them and we danced a little.”

Turning to Tommy, she tried to control her emotions, but she didn’t do a very good job of it. “It was nothing, but Deke got jealous. And when he found out they were from a Jewish fraternity . . .”

“He killed him,” Tommy uttered.

“There was violence at these shows. Some people, they hear things in the music that’s not there. They hear what they want to hear, not just the violence but the racism. The truth is that it’s the only music I know that speaks out against this. It speaks out against every ism there is. It shouts it as loud as can be. It shouted it so loud that even I heard it. And Richard Hell is Jewish. So is Keith Morris and a lot of the Circle Jerks. Ron Reyes is Puerto Rican and Bad Brains are black. But to Deke and people like him, every song is a call for a race war and a second Holocaust. Every song is about splitting someone’s head open. A couple of times Deke had put people in the hospital, but he never did anything like this. This time it wasn’t just talk.”

Rudi gasped for breath. She looked as if she were going to fall apart and tumble into the ravine below. “He had the kid on the floor and wouldn’t stop beating him. And I didn’t do a thing.”

“You couldn’t’ve done anything,” Tommy insisted.

“I could’ve tried!”

“You are.”

She spun toward him in anger. “Don’t make me into some kind of hero. I’m just cutting a deal, like millions of other losers.”

“You’re not a loser!”

“Even my mom thought so! She left me like a piece of trash on the side of the road.”

“She’s the one who lost.”

Rudi looked into his eyes. She looked for a long time and as if she were trying to believe him.

“That blood you said was on your coat,” he continued, “it was the kid’s, wasn’t it?”

Once more, she turned from him.

“Wasn’t it?” he repeated and louder.

“Everyone ran when they heard the sirens. Even Deke. I didn’t know what to do. I tried to stop the bleeding, and that’s when the cops came.”

“You’re not wearing it, your coat.”

“I forgot it. I was so out of it this morning. I couldn’t sleep last night at all. I haven’t slept through the night since it happened. I keep seeing that boy’s face. I relive the same ten minutes every night, and it always ends the same. No matter what I do, he dies. Nothing I’ll ever do will change this.”

Tommy wanted to say something. Something that could’ve taken away the pain. But couldn’t think of anything, so he muttered the first thing that entered his head. “You must be cold.”

She crossed her arms, as if only now did she realize she was cold, and she scowled. “I’m fine.”

He took off his jacket anyway. “I want you to wear mine.”

She kept her arms crossed. But he wouldn’t relent, and she let him put the coat on her. Though she sneered at the corniness of it as she put her hands into the sleeves.

“It looks good on you,” he told her.

“How would you know?”

He grinned. “Believe me, I know.”

They finished with the jacket, and he reached for her hand. But, like in the restaurant, he stopped himself. He stopped himself and peered into the forest while recalling how difficult it had been getting Rudi to walk through it.

“If you hadn’t noticed,” she moaned to him as they made their way through all the rocks and branches, “I’m not exactly a Campfire Girl.”

Tommy smiled. He smiled all the way to the falls.

Tommy was again smiling as he stared into the water. “I come here a lot. It’s my favorite place in the world. Do you know that some of my earliest memories are of this forest? There used to be a deer paddock on Crest Drive where we parked. When I was a kid, I’d feed them Cracker Jack from the palm of my hand.”

“That must’ve done wonders for their teeth,” she cackled before she gazed at the beauty around her and listened to the peacefulness of it. “You were right. This is the best anywhere.”

Tommy realized there was one place better. Any one with her in it. But he only wrote this in his journal. What he said to her was: “The falls help me, I don’t know, they help me forget things.”

“I wanna forget. I wanna forget everything.”

“When my dad, when he was dying over the summer, I came here every day.”

Glancing at Rudi, Tommy saw the surprise on her face, a surprise mixed with a sorrow deeper than any he’d seen, and this surprised him. She always surprised him, and she did so again when she put her arm around him.

He did the same to her as she took a deep breath of the mountain air and murmured, “This place kinda reminds me . . .”

“What?”

She shook her head. “It’s stupid.”

“Tell me.”

“It reminds me of something from a fairy tale.”

He gasped, surprised by her once more. “You read fairy tales?”

“I did when I was little. The library was the one place I could escape, from my mom and especially my stepdad. Sometimes I’d spend all afternoon there, even though I couldn’t read at first. I kept pestering this librarian to teach me. ‘You’ll learn when you start school,’ she kept telling me. But I couldn’t wait. I couldn’t wait another minute. So I pestered and pestered her until she caved in. Then I read every fairy tale they had. I even wrote my own and illustrated it.”

“Really?”

“It was just stick figures and finger paint and junk like that. But I was so proud of it. I so wanted to believe in it and make it come true.”

“What was it about?”

“Oh, I don’t know. A girl and a prince and a happily ever after. The usual nonsense.”

“I don’t think it’s nonsense.”

Like before, Rudi looked into Tommy’s eyes. She looked as if she were gauging him, and she leaned her head on his shoulder.

This didn’t surprise Tommy. It shocked him. Not the act itself but his reaction to it. Girls had done this to him many times, but it never meant anything, not to them or to him. Nor did it make him feel as good as what he felt at that moment, even if he didn’t know why it did. I think it was because everything Rudi did meant something, and this meant everything.

“I . . .” he stammered as he felt a couple of raindrops fall on his head. He wanted to tell her: “I want you to be my girl.” He wrote this across a whole page of his journal. He wrote it on lots of them, and he didn’t just want to say it. He wanted to scream it. He wanted everything in the forest to hear him and could hear the words echo back to him.

*I want you to be my girl*.

But the only words that came out were: “You want something to eat?”

Tommy and Rudi sat at a booth in a diner called Grunnings with a pair of Cokes in front of them.

The restaurant abutted the reservation and had a large window in the back that provided a birds-eye view of the forest, which they were both staring into when they heard the sounds of an old song coming from nearby. Turning toward it, they saw a smiling elderly couple a few booths over, who were listening to the music from the small jukebox at their table.

The song unnerved Tommy, as it was the same from his dream. But he wondered whether he should’ve been. He wondered if he should’ve expected it. If he should’ve known that the playing of it was inevitable as the girl sitting across from him.

This girl spun toward him with a grin. “I know this song. I heard it in a dream when I first got here.”

Again, Tommy became unnerved, even more so. “A dream?”

“Yeah, I was . . .”

“Dancing with someone?”

“How did you know?”

He shrugged.

“Anyway,” she continued while looking unnerved herself, “I couldn’t remember where I had heard the song before. But now I do. They were playing it at the end of that *Quincy* episode. The one where he went after punk rock. This was his example of the music people like me should be listening to.”

“I guess you don’t like it too much,” he said.

“I didn’t say that. It’s just, I don’t know, different. Old.”

“You mean like E. E. Cummings?”

Rudi smirked.

“It’s called ‘Moonlight Serenade’ by Glenn Miller,” he let her know. “It was a big hit back in the thirties or the forties. I can remember my grandma listening to it on repeat all day in her room on one of those 78 players. When I was little, sometimes I’d sit outside her door and listen too, and never once did I get tired of it. You know, I hadn’t heard it in years until . . .”

“Until what?”

“It doesn’t matter.”

The song reached its break, and Tommy and Rudi again glanced at the couple, and they saw they were kissing.

“My dad once told me,” Tommy said as he and Rudi returned their glances to each other, “he told me that, when he first kissed my mom, Julie London was singing ‘Two Sleepy People’ at some nightclub they were at in New York. It would always be their song. It would always remind him of how he knew right then that he lov . . .”

Tommy stopped mid-sentence. He stopped while watching Rudi’s face react to what he had just said. He could see both fear and excitement and felt them, and he realized they’d come from the same thing, from what he had just said or almost said. He was in love with the crazy-looking girl across from him. Only then did he know it, and now so did she.

Slowly, he leaned toward her, and she leaned toward him. They couldn’t stop themselves, and their lips were just about to meet.

“Two garden salads,” barked a woman’s voice, causing the two to jump back in their seats.

The waitress put the salads in front of them, along with a heaping dose of skepticism. “You sure that’s all you guys want?”

Tommy shrugged. “It’s the only thing on the menu without meat.”

“Kids today,” the woman said while shaking her head and marching off, leaving Tommy and Rudi to chuckle.

“You know, they do have fries,” he mentioned to her.

“No, thanks,” she groaned as she took a small bite of the salad.

“So, how’d you become a vegetarian?”

“You’ll laugh at me again.”

“I won’t. I promise.”

“It was because of *Bambi*.”

“*Bambi?”* he gasped.

“You’re laughing at me,” she growled.

“I’m not. Well, maybe a little.”

“When his mom gets shot and he cries out for her, it was real personal for me. I knew exactly what he was feeling. What about you? How did you become a vegetarian?”

“I really don’t know. I woke one morning and I was. Maybe it was all those deer I fed Cracker Jack as a kid. But I never did see *Bambi*.”

Tommy paid the bill at the register in front of the diner, and he and Rudi slowly started toward the doors.

“What are you gonna do after you testify?” he asked her.

“I don’t even know what I’m gonna do after today,” she answered. “Deke isn’t just gonna go away.”

“How’d he find you here?”

“That I don’t know either. But he doesn’t know that I’m testifying against him. He thinks they’ve resettled me here.”

“So what does he want from you?”

“What he’s always wanted.”

The two reached the doors. Likely trying to change the subject, Rudi opened one of them for Tommy and did so with a grin.

He grinned back. “Touché, Ms. Weiss.”

They walked outside, and he saw that it was raining and that this was getting harder. “I could call my mom. Maybe she could give us a lift.”

Ignoring this, Rudi marched into the falling water and up to the Harley, and she sat on the seat. “I thought you liked to live dangerously.”

Grinning once more, Tommy hustled into the rain, and he jumped onto the bike. With her arms around him, he gunned it out of the parking lot and down South Orange Avenue, and he made a sharp left onto Harding Drive. It was so sharp that the two were almost touching the ground.

Quickly, the bike regained balance, and Rudi screamed. She screamed and wrapped her legs around him.

He glanced back at her, and he saw her tilt her head to catch the falling rain in her mouth. But what he really noticed was her joy. Never had he seen anyone so happy, and he wondered if this was on his face.

Something else struck Tommy. He had gotten the bike on the day he had gotten his driver’s license, but this was the first time he ever had fun on it. He wondered if he ever had fun at all before her.

Tommy parked in front of his house, with the rain coming to an end, along with the fun. Rudi became quiet, and he turned toward her and saw the discomfort and unease on her face as she gazed at his big house along with her fear.

“I thought Versailles was in France,” she quipped.

“Funny,” he said.

“Seriously, your mom must be the Queen of Navarre.”

“Not even close.”

Tommy got off the bike, and he noticed something in his rearview mirror. Whipping his head around, he saw a car turn down Overhill Road. A car that looked a lot like the red Porsche Deke drove.

“What’s wrong?” she asked.

“Nothing,” he answered, and he started toward his house. But she didn’t follow, and he spun back to her in exasperation. “Come on.”

She shook her head. “Just take me home. You obviously know where it is.”

“We’ll dry off, and then I’ll take you home.”

She sighed and did so loudly. But she followed him into the house and to the large foyer, where she gazed at her surroundings as if she were in another world until Tommy took a pair of towels from a nearby closet and offered her one.

She dropped her seabag onto the floor by the door and took the towel, which she used to dry herself while Tommy did likewise with his own.

“Mom?” he called out as Rudi handed him her towel. “Elizabeth?”

There was no reply.

“Who’s Elizabeth?” Rudi asked.

“You’ll find out.”

Rudi rolled her eyes, and she took off his football jacket and offered it to him.

Reluctantly, he took it and put it and both towels on the staircase’s handrail.

Rudi scowled. “You’re just gonna leave them there? Not even a punk would do that.”

“Elizabeth will pick ’em up,” he explained.

“Again with Elizabeth.”

Spotting a bowl of wrapped white chocolate truffles on an end table, Tommy grabbed it and offered Rudi some.

She grimaced. “White chocolate?”

“It’s my favorite,” he told her.

“It’s disgusting, and it’s not even chocolate.”

Tommy took a piece for himself, and he cooed as he ate it.

Again, Rudi grimaced, and she put her hands on her hips. “Can’t you see how ridiculous we are together? We’re barely the same species.”

Tommy grimaced right back at her. “It just looks that way. The truth is I’ve never met anyone more like me. But you already know this, don’t you?”

Rudi searched for a response. Not finding one, she started up the long winding wooden staircase.

“Where you going?” he called out.

“I wanna see the rest of this palace,” she let him know.

He followed, and she began singing. She sang another song he had never heard. Though its lyrics about a house and the paper-thin veneer of happiness inside it was all too familiar, and he wondered how she always seemed to know things about him that he didn’t know himself.

Approaching the second-floor landing, Rudi came to a sudden halt, and she ceased singing and flung herself toward Tommy, who came to a stop a few steps below her.

“Some people say I look like her,” she remarked.

“Who?” he asked.

This exasperated Rudi. “Siouxsie.”

“Susie who?”

Rudi sneered at him and crossed her arms. “What music do you listen to? I mean, other than Glenn Miller.”

“I don’t know. I listen to the Yardbirds sometimes.”

“And?”

“Whatever’s on the radio.”

“That’s exactly what I don’t listen to.”

Spinning back around, Rudi continued up the staircase followed by Tommy. By the landing, she again stopped when she came upon a framed autographed photo of Ronald Reagan on the wall, which she snarled it.

“Now what?” he yelped as he stopped behind her.

“What a surprise,” she cried out. “You’re a Republican.”

“My dad actually knew him a little.”

“You don’t say?”

“They weren’t big friends or anything. But when my dad died, he called my mom. He spoke to her for twenty minutes, the president of the United States. He could’ve just sent a card. No one would’ve blamed him. So, yeah, I’m a Republican.”

It looked like Rudi was about to respond. But instead she headed down the second-floor hallway.

“Now where you going?” Tommy yelled as he followed her.

She continued on without answering. Reaching the door at the end of the hallway, she grabbed the doorknob as Tommy grabbed her arm. “Don’t go in there. My mom wouldn’t like it.”

“*My mom wouldn’t like it*,” she squealed.

Shaking off his arm, she thrust open the door, and she stepped inside a bedroom that I’m sure was unlike anything she’d seen in real life, with a large canopy bed, a crystal chandelier, and lots of antique furniture. She stopped in shock as she gaped at it. “Your mom really is the Queen of Navarre.”

“Can we go now?” he begged.

Rudi stepped deeper into the room, and Tommy reluctantly went with her. At the far end of it, she came to a large open closet, and she ran her fingers through dozens of dresses as she walked from one end of the closet to the other. “You’d never see me in a dress.”

“Who says I want to?” he snapped.

She stopped at the last dress, a white wedding gown wrapped in plastic, and she snickered at it. “Marriage: what an outdated and sexist . . .”

She paused. She paused as she gazed at the dress and its long train. “It’s just like the one . . .”

Tommy didn’t let her finish. He slammed one of the sliding closet doors in front of her, and she turned toward him and his anger.

“Now do you see how wrong we are?” she bellowed. “How I’d embarrass you all the time?”

“I’m not embarrassed!” he howled.

“You look like you want to spit in my face.”

“It’s you who’s doing all the spitting. What’s gotten into you?”

“This is me. The real me. The me who’s leaving.”

She hesitated but started off.

He grabbed her hand as she passed, and something incredible happened. He felt her tremble, from nothing more than his touch. It was a tremble that meant so many things that his mind couldn’t process them all. This along with shock on her face gave him the courage to pull her toward himself.

She resisted. “Let go of me.”

He didn’t, nor did he stop pulling.

“Don’t you realize how easily I could lay you out on the floor?” she howled. “And you’d stay there!”

Tommy knew this was true, but it just excited him more, and he pulled harder.

She didn’t stop resisting. Neither was getting anywhere, so they stopped and stared at each other. They stared until Rudi loudly sighed. “What the hell . . .”

Throwing off his hand, she jumped into his arms, and she kissed him while wrapping herself around him. This sent them spinning around the room, knocking into walls and furniture while sending much of the latter onto the floor. But Tommy was beyond caring. There was only her kiss. It shuddered through him and made him scream, even if only he could hear it. It got so loud it became deafening, and this drove him into her further. They were thrashing around, and they almost smashed through a window.

One thing prevented this. The sound of someone clearing their throat.

They broke their kiss and opened their eyes, and they turned toward the doorway of the room. Standing there with her arms crossed and a frown on her face was Tommy’s mother.

I took my time as I put down the page, and I could just about see Rudi blushing on the other end of the line.

“Wipe that smirk off your face,” she growled.

I cackled. “That’s it for today. Tomorrow?”

“Tomorrow.”

I worked on Saturdays, so I needed a bus pass for the following day. But Bob couldn’t find them when I stopped by the office. This meant I would have to go through the hassle of trying to get one in the morning.

Still, I was in a good mood when I walked into the men’s dorm, and I wasn’t the only one. Instead of snoring, everyone was laughing. They were laughing as they ragged on Hector.

Hector was a Mexican-American who badly wanted to live in Mexico. But because he didn’t have citizenship there, the authorities kept sending him back to America. He was only staying at the shelter so he could save enough money to make another run for the border.

It was the Hispanic guys in the room who found the most humor in Hector’s predicament. “Dude,” one of them called out, “you must be the only Mexican who ever got deported *from* Mexico.” Another added, “You should ask Trump for help. I’m sure he’d pull some strings for you.”

Even Hector had to laugh at this.

I smiled but not because of the jokes. I smiled because for the first time since I’d come to the shelter I didn’t feel like I was in one. We were just a bunch of guys joking around on a Friday night and that felt great.

the fourth night

Saturdays were always a working day for me, so they weren’t much different than any other. Even my days off weren’t that different.

One difference on this Saturday, apart from Lynnette’s birthday party later, was that I had no bus pass. I had to wait for the assistant director of the shelter to come in that morning and get me one. While standing at the gates, I knew time was running out to make my first bus when his blue station wagon parked outside and he staggered out of it and toward me.

Dan was a hefty man in his late fifties, who was slow in many ways, and he took his time looking for the passes. But he had no more success in finding them than Bob had the night before, and he turned to me with a scowl. “Do you really need one right now?”

“I have to be at work in Hesperia this morning,” I explained. “I have to go right now. I’ll buy a pass myself if that’s okay.”

“It’s not okay. We’d throw you out if you did that.”

So he gave me the money. But he only gave me $3.50.

“A day pass costs $4.00,” I told him.

He shook his head. “It was $3.50 the last time I bought one.”

“It’s not $3.50 now.”

He didn’t believe me. I had to get out my phone and show him the website for the Victor Valley Transit Authority before he would give me the last pair of quarters.

Running for the bus stop didn’t help. I just missed it, and I got to the motel an hour late. This meant I would have to move even faster than usual if I wanted to make it back in time for the party.

Amoun would often have me clean the big messes left in the rooms, so that the cleaning ladies could get through their normal duties before the next guests checked in. There were always plenty of these after a Friday night. In one room, I had to mop the walls, where hung a combination of red wine and something a little more solid.

I had just about finished when Alaya walked inside the room with her cart.

“Hey,” I mumbled to her, not sure what else to say.

With a lot of embarrassment, she scurried into the bathroom. Only then did she say something. “I’m really sorry about yesterday.”

“There’s nothing to be sorry about.”

“It’s just . . . I read something really upsetting on the Internet yesterday.”

“Yeah?”

“They broke up a trafficking ring in Adelanto the other day.”

Slowly, she peaked her head through the bathroom doorway. “It’s terrible what these women go through.”

From the look on her face, I could tell she wasn’t speaking about some hypothetical women. But again I wasn’t sure what to say, even more so. She didn’t know what to say either, and we stared at each other blankly until she returned to the bathroom.

“You know,” I called out while pretending to work, “there are, there are people you can talk to.”

“About what?” she innocently asked.

I didn’t answer. Instead I put my mop in my bucket and pushed it to the front door of the room, where I could see her cleaning the sink as she tried to keep herself together.

“Don’t look at me like I’m a victim,” she groaned with her eyes locked onto the sink. “I hate that.”

“I’m sorry,” I babbled after quickly turning away.

“Don’t say that either.”

“I . . .”

“You’re probably wondering how I ended up in this dump.”

“It had crossed my mind. But I’ve wondered it about a lot of people, including myself.”

“I wanted to be a doctor. I got really good marks in school and was all set to go to the university. But my parents, they wanted me to marry this guy, a guy twice my age. Actually, to say ‘they wanted,’ is not putting it strongly enough. I didn’t have a choice. Then I saw an ad for an au pair on Craigslist and . . .”

“I can guess the rest.”

“No, you can’t.”

I stood silently in response, probably with a dumb look on my face.

She sighed and shook her head. “You know, I thought I had this behind me. I’m starting classes at Cal State down the hill next month.”

“That’s terrific.”

“But I guess, I guess I don’t have it behind me.”

“You should try—”

“—They don’t help. I’ve tried. It’s too impersonal. These people, they’re like a million miles from having any understanding of me and what I went through.”

“I have a sister . . .”

“What is she, like a counselor or something?”

“Not exactly. But she’s helped a lot of people get through stuff. It’s kind of an obsession for her, maybe because she’s been through a lot herself. She’s certainly not a million miles from you.”

“I don’t know.”

“I could call her.”

Alaya turned toward me as I reached into my pants pocket, and she gasped, “You mean, right now?”

I didn’t answer her. I took out my phone and dialed my sister.

“I don’t have time,” Alaya screeched. “I’ve got to finish these rooms before check-in.”

“Just talk to her for a few minutes.”

“What’s up?” my sister said into the phone on the first ring.

“I know you must be busy right now,” I told her, “but there’s someone here I’d like you to talk to. She could use some help.”

“Put her on.”

I offered the phone to Alaya, but she wouldn’t take it.

“Please,” I whispered, and she reluctantly took the device.

She started speaking with Rudi, and I left the room with my mop and bucket and closed the door behind myself. Which Alaya opened while peeking her head into the hallway. “What about your phone?”

“I’ll get it from you later.”

I left the motel after my shift and was walking across Cataba Road to the bus stop when Alaya yelled my name.

Turning around, I saw her running toward me with my phone in her hand and her big smile back on her face.

She hugged me. She hugged me for a long time. “Your sister is so amazing.”

“Believe me, I know,” I said with a grin as we broke our embrace and she handed me the phone.

“It was like talking to my big sister or something. Better, actually. My real big sister won’t talk to me. Rudi and I are doing a Zoom call tomorrow morning with someone she knows. Someone . . . someone who’s a lot like me. She runs a support group in LA, and Rudi says I can participate remotely.”

“Everything’s gonna work out for you. I just know it.”

“I don’t know how to thank you.”

“Get better. Maybe it’ll inspire me to do the same.”

“Who knows, maybe one day I’ll be the one giving help.”

“Life’s a series of cycles constantly renewing themselves.”

On the bus ride home, I got curious about the trafficking ring Alaya told me about. I got curious enough that I searched for the story on my phone, and I found a few of them from local news sites. I learned the police a few days earlier had arrested two men in Old Adelanto, a miserable place one town over that made Victorville look like Paradise. They were still looking for a third man, but other than that there wasn’t much information. Though one site did mention that both men had served in the army together a handful of years earlier.

With the sun setting, I entered the gates of the shelter, and I noticed all the birthday decorations in the courtyard, which Nicole had somehow gotten her hands on. Along with these I noticed Nicole, who frantically rushed up to me with exasperation pouring out of her. “Have you seen Josh?”

I started to answer, but Matt called out my name from a chair a handful of steps away, and I turned toward him.

“There’s a letter for you in the office,” he said.

“Thanks,” I told him.

“Have you seen Josh?” Nicole shrieked.

“No.”

“There’s no Josh. So there’s no cake. And there’s no birthday party without a cake. Lynnette and her mom will be here in an hour.”

“We still have time to buy one.”

“I wouldn’t do that,” groaned Matt with his arms crossed and his head shaking.

Nicole pointed down the street. “Stater Brothers has this big cake for twenty bucks, and that includes decorating it.”

“We can all chip in,” I suggested.

“I wouldn’t do that,” Matt groaned again, again with his head shaking.

“They can’t throw us all out.”

“They can’t?”

Ignoring this, Nicole and I went around the courtyard and stealthily collected money. I was surprised that almost everyone gave, even if it was only the change in their pockets and even if this was all they had, for a little girl most of them barely knew, if that. Even Sharon, one of the people who worked at the shelter, gave us five dollars when she found out what we were up to, despite knowing she could’ve been fired for it. Matt gave too, however grudgingly. We ended up with more money than we needed, enough to buy some extras and a small gift for Lynnette.

Hector, who had a car, sped me to the supermarket. We got the cake and had it decorated, and we returned with it, a box of candles, a few bottles of soda, and a small teddy bear.

Quickly, Nicole grabbed the cake from me, and she put ten candles on it.

“They’re coming!” someone howled from the gates as Nicole lit the candles. Another someone turned off the lights, which they flipped back on when Lynnette and her mother entered the gates to a chorus of “Happy Birthday to You.”

The surprise and joy on that little girl’s face was something none of us would likely forget, especially her mother, who was barely holding back the tears. For those moments, Lynnette was just a normal ten year old celebrating a birthday, just a normal girl made to feel that she was special and that she mattered.

Likewise, we were just normal people attending a birthday party. I saw that the party was as much for us as it was for Lynnette, and maybe that’s why everyone gave. We needed it as much as she did and maybe more.

Josh showed up, with no cake, of course. But he was certainly surprised to see one. He might’ve been more surprised than Lynnette and her mother.

Nicole marched up to him with her fists clenched. “Where were you?”

He shrugged. “I got stuck on the 395. Some police action.”

This piqued my interest, as I knew that road went right through Old Adelanto. What piqued it more was when I recalled that Josh had been in the army, just like the two men who’d been arrested.

This could’ve been nothing more than coincidence, but I wondered if it could be more.

I checked in, and Josh handed me the letter that had been waiting for me on the desk. But he didn’t let go of it. “How’d you guys get the cake?”

I stammered as I tried to come up with an answer. “I, I had some money left on an old EBT card. We’re allowed to use that, right?”

He didn’t say anything. But he released the envelope, and I started out of the office.

“I think I’ll be watching you,” he called out.

“*Quis custodiet ipsos custodes?”* I shot back.

“What’s that?”

“It’s from a poem by Juvenal.”

What I didn’t tell him was what it meant.

*Who watches the watchers?*

I knew there was only one person who could.

I walked into the courtyard as the party was ending. Lynnette and a few other kids were finishing the huge banana split sundaes that Rich had made for them, from ice cream he had somehow conjured up.

I couldn’t stop grinning at this as I took Tommy’s letter to the corner booth and called Rudi. Unlike the previous few nights, it rang many times. I think we both knew that this would be one of the more difficult parts of the story.

On the fifth ring, she picked up. Without any small talk, I opened the envelope and started reading its pages.

It took Tommy a while to grasp what was happening, that he was pressed against a window in his mother’s bedroom and that Rudi was wrapped around him and that his mother was glaring at them both.

Quickly, he released his arms from Rudi and spun toward his mother, sending Rudi to the floor.

“Sorry about this, Mom,” he uttered as Rudi jumped to her feet.

The woman continued her glare. “It’s just fortunate for all of us that I didn’t arrive about ten minutes later.”

“It’s not like that, Mom,” he insisted as he and Rudi slowly made their way toward her. “Really.”

Closer the two got to his mother, and Tommy could see the disgust growing on her face. Disgust of Rudi. She didn’t even bother to hide it as the pair stopped in front of her.

The woman looked them over, and she noticed something about both that got her even more upset. “Did you two just get out of the shower?”

“It’s not like that, Mom,” Tommy screeched. “We got caught in the rain. Sorta.”

“Aren’t you going to introduce me?” the woman grumbled through her clenched teeth.

“This is Rudi, my . . .”

Tommy honestly didn’t know what to call her, and he stammered.

“I’m his friend,” Rudi blurted out. “Sorta.”

“Will your friend be staying for dinner?” Mrs. Goodwin asked Tommy.

“Yes,” he answered at the same time Rudi answered with a “No,” and she turned to him and scowled.

“By all means stay for dinner, Rudi,” the woman said with her jaw again clenched and disgust again over her face. “I’m just dying to know more about you.”

Tommy and Rudi sat on the living-room couch together, with Rudi many stages past anxious. “She hates me. And if I were her, I’d hate me too.”

“It’s just you remind her of someone,” Tommy said. “Someone real close.”

“Just wait till she finds out about my record and all the drugs I’ve done. Which is just about every one, by the way.”

“I don’t care about the past. I don’t even care about the future anymore. All I care about is now.”

“Some of us can’t separate our past from our now. Or our future.”

“Look—”

“—And I’m sure she’ll be overjoyed when she learns about that kid who got killed.”

“I don’t care.”

“Just take me home.”

“Right after dinner.”

“Maria said she lives near you.”

“Down the block.”

Rudi jumped to her feet. “Just point me in her direction.”

“Please stay. Please.”

Rudi sighed, and she fell back onto the couch.

Picking up a remote off the coffee table, Tommy turned to her. “You wanna watch TV?”

She crossed her arms and spun from him. “I hate TV.”

Tommy put it on anyway and flipped through the channels. He came upon MTV and the video of Prince’s “1999,” and he continued flipping. He only stopped when he found *The Uncle Floyd Show* on a little UHF channel, and he started watching the strange and irreverent comedy show that most people didn’t know existed. I’m not even sure Floyd knew.

Surprised at what he was watching, Rudi uncrossed her arms and turned toward the TV. “I hate everything but this.”

“What’s that?” he asked with his attention on the screen.

She glanced at him incredulously. “You really watch *Uncle Floyd?”*

He didn’t answer, and she watched the show with him. They watched until they burst out into laughter, causing them to glance at each other in surprise.

Tommy smiled, and so did she. Though she told him: “It doesn’t mean a thing.”

“Dinner’s ready!” Mrs. Goodwin called out from the dining room.

Tommy, Rudi, and Mrs. Goodwin took their seats in front of a formal table setting, which Rudi gazed at in confusion. “I don’t think I’ve ever seen so many utensils.”

“We don’t usually eat so formally,” Tommy grumbled while glaring at his mother.

“I thought it’d be a nice change,” the woman said.

Tommy continued his glare, realizing that his mother was trying to make Rudi feel out of place. “It’s real simple,” he told Rudi. “As the courses come, just use the utensils farthest from you.”

“Why don’t we just use the same utensils?” Rudi bellowed. “What’s the big deal?”

Mrs. Goodwin chuckled and with lots of condescension. “You eat however way you want, my dear.”

Quietly, Rudi fumed. Which was interrupted when the kitchen doors swung open and Elizabeth entered the room carrying a tray of piping-hot parsley soup, which she served to them. Tommy could see this serving was making Rudi uncomfortable, as uncomfortable as she had been outside his house. Like then, she tried to hide this under a quip. “Now I know where they got the idea for *Upstairs, Downstairs*.”

This sent grins across the faces of both Elizabeth and Tommy. But Mrs. Goodwin didn’t find it so funny, and she glowered, at no one in particular. “Thank you, Elizabeth.”

The grin left Elizabeth’s face right away, and she nodded at the woman and shuffled off quickly.

Seeing Rudi stare at her soup in wonder, Mrs. Goodwin noted, “I should warn you, Rudi, my son’s been on a weird fad of late, which I’ve regretably humored.”

“What do you mean?” Rudi asked as she lifted her eyes off the soup.

“He doesn’t eat meat.”

“Rudi’s a vegetarian too,” Tommy said.

“How convenient,” the woman remarked with a knowing smirk.

Clenching her fists, Rudi plopped them onto the table. “I’ve been a vegetarian since I was fourteen.”

“I’m sure you have, dear.”

This made Rudi angrier. But noticing Tommy taking a sip of soup, she calmed herself and took a small sip, and she couldn’t hide her surprise. “This is really good. It sure beats stale fries.”

Tommy wasn’t sure what to say to this. So he just glanced at Rudi, and he watched her take another sip. This one was larger than the first, and she slurped it a bit loud, drawing the attention of Mrs. Goodwin, who turned toward her son and forced a smile. “Tell me, Tommy, just wherever did you two meet?”

“Rudi’s in my math class.”

This shocked his mother. “I thought you were taking AP Calculus.”

“I am. Rudi’s the smartest one there. She might be the smartest person in the whole school.”

“That’s not true,” Rudi groaned.

“What did you get on your SAT?”

“I forget.”

“I bet. I bet it was perfect.”

“You’d lose that bet. They cheated me out of a few points.”

Even Mrs. Goodwin had to grin at this, and Tommy couldn’t hold back his excitement. “You should’ve seen her solve this partial fraction decomposition integration. She solved it like it was addition. Even Mrs. Roth was impressed, and she’s never impressed by anything. Then Rudi wrote ‘Q.E.D.’ beside it.”

“Quite easily done,” Mrs. Goodwin exclaimed.

“Actually,” Rudi replied, “it means—”

“—*Quod erat demonstrandum*,” the woman interrupted.

“My mom was Phi Beta Kappa at Radcliffe,” Tommy let Rudi know. “The other night she was even telling me that she saw E. E. Cummings in person at school.”

“Really?” Rudi mumbled in surprise.

Mrs. Goodwin shook her head. “That was a long time ago, Tommy.”

“He was giving a lecture at Harvard,” Tommy continued. “As he walked to the lectern, she and some other Radcliffe girls stood up and started reciting . . . what was the poem of his you recited?”

The woman sighed. “‘Buffalo Bill’s.’”

“And what did he do?”

Again, the woman sighed. “He stopped and turned to us. When we finished, he took out his handkerchief and waved it at us. I thought he was going to cry.”

“Wow,” was all Rudi could say.

“Rudi just wrote a poem in his style for one of her classes,” Tommy blurted out.

Spinning toward him, Rudi raised her fist. “Don’t you dare recite it.”

“Well, Rudi,” commented Mrs. Goodwin, “you certainly are a Renaissance woman. Calculus and modernist poetry. If only the school offered a beauty class.”

“*Mom*,” Tommy quietly snarled.

“Do you actually pay someone to do that to your hair?”

“Didn’t you tell me that you were a beatnik?”

“That was completely different.”

“How? Are you saying people didn’t prejudge you? That they didn’t look down on you because of how you dressed and acted?”

“We had big ideas!” Mrs. Goodwin howled as she jumped up in her chair. “We weren’t painting our faces and running around screaming!”

Rudi slammed her fists onto the table. “That’s not what it’s about! It’s about expressing who we are and how we feel. And either you can’t understand this or can’t handle it.”

The woman had no reply. So she changed the subject. “I didn’t catch your last name, Rudi.”

“Weiss,” Rudi barked, still furious.

Again, Mrs. Goodwin became shocked. “You’re Jewish?”

“Wwwhat?” Rudi stuttered while looking even more shocked than Tommy’s mother. “I thought ‘Weiss’ was German.”

“It’s also a very common Jewish name.”

“I have heard you say ‘*oy vey*,’ Tommy interjected. “More than once.”

Rudi spun toward him. “That’s Jewish?”

“It’s Yiddish,” Mrs. Goodwin explained.

“You think I could be Jewish?” Rudi said to Tommy with horror all over her face.

“Are you ashamed of it?” grumbled Mrs. Goodwin.

Rudi turned from both of them and probably from herself. “Not in the way you think.”

Silence followed. A good amount of it. It went on and on until Mrs. Goodwin told Tommy: “You’ll never guess who I saw this afternoon at the Short Hills Mall . . . Darlene. So beautiful, so . . .”

Glancing at Rudi, the woman added, “So unlike anything else.”

Rudi lowered her eyes, and Tommy growled, “That’s enough.”

“I’m just telling it like I see it. I’m sure Rudi sees it too.”

“Look, I’m sorry about what happened this afternoon, but it doesn’t give you the right to treat Rudi like this. I won’t have it.”

“Darlene was telling me how she got accepted into Penn. Swarthmore too. Of course, she’s waiting to see what you’ll do.”

“She shouldn’t.”

“And why is that?”

“Darlene’s beautiful, there’s no question about that. And she’s smart. She can even be funny at times. But I can barely stand the sound of her voice. I cringe whenever she touches me.”

“Well, you certainly weren’t cringing this afternoon.”

Tommy was about to respond when Rudi looked up at the woman. “Listen, Mrs. Goodwin, despite what you saw earlier and despite what Tommy thinks he feels, there’s nothing serious going on between us.”

“Nothing but Glenn Miller,” growled Tommy.

“Glenn Miller?” the woman gasped.

“But that’s nothing serious. It’s not like we feel the same things or dream the same things or that we laugh at the same jokes or that anything happens when I take her hand.”

To prove this, he put his hand on hers, and like before he felt her tremble.

She yanked her hand away and tried to hide her emotions, but she didn’t do a very good job of it. “Next week, Tommy, next week you’ll find someone else.”

“That’s not true.”

“I’m just some exotic flavor you’ve never tasted.”

Now it was Tommy’s turn to slam his fists onto the table. “That’s not true!”

“Look at me, Tommy,” she babbled while looking away from him. “Really look at me. Look not just at my hair or my clothes but who I am. I’m not gonna end up with some preppy football player Republican, and I’m not gonna end up at Penn or Swarthmore. I’m not gonna end up anywhere!”

Rudi jumped to her feet, and she rushed out of the room as Tommy jumped to his own feet.

“Let her go,” his mother uttered.

“Shut up!” he yelled as he ran after Rudi.

“She’s not for you!”

“Her eyelids’ flutter tells me you’re wrong!”

Tommy reached the foyer as Rudi swung her seabag over her shoulder by the front door. On the verge of tears, she flung open the door and ran out, leaving the door wide open.

He followed. He ran outside as she reached the street, and he called out her name.

“Leave me alone!” she shrieked with her voice past the breaking point. “I was doing just fine until I met you, and now . . .”

“Rudi, please . . .”

She stopped and spun toward him, and she threw her hands into the air. “What can you possibly see in me?”

“It’s the other way around. It’s that you see something in me that makes me think that maybe, maybe there’s something there.”

She stood there for a moment and rushed off. She rushed into the night with him staring at her, unable to move or to express the words he wanted to say. The same ones he had wanted to say by the waterfall.

I didn’t even have to ask Rudi to tell me what had happened to her after she left Tommy’s house. Hearing the pause on the line after I finished reading the journal entry, she must’ve expected the question, because she just started telling me.

Rudi wandered through the streets of Newstead, without getting anywhere but more upset, especially at herself.

If her mind had been clouded with thoughts of sex, she could’ve easily wrote off what she was feeling. But it wasn’t. She wasn’t even thinking about Tommy but his hand and how badly she wanted to hold it. There could be no reasoning for this. There was no way to rationalize it.

Like she often did when she was troubled, she reached for her music. However, the one thing about punk rock is that there are no love songs. None at all. There are only a few songs that even broach the subject. But she had one of these with her: “Love Und Romance” by the Slits, perhaps the most cynical song ever written about the feelings swirling around her.

This was just what she wanted to hear, or so she told herself. She threw the tape into her Walkman, found the song, and she cranked the volume all the way up while screaming with Ari Up. She screamed for what seemed like hours while constantly rewinding the song after it finished. She rewound it so many times that she knew exactly how long to press the rewind button till it returned her to the beginning of the song.

But no matter how hard she screamed or how often she listened to the song, she couldn’t regain her old self. This was when she knew she was cooked, when she knew she was “head over heels in love,” no matter how stupid it sounded, and there was nothing she could do about it but cry. The strangest thing was that she didn’t know why she was crying or whether she was crying because she was happy or sad.

Wiping her eyes, she saw a little old lady walking a little old dog down the block, and she rushed up to them.

The woman took a big step back, for the obvious reason. But seeing Rudi’s tears as she came to a stop, another instinct must’ve kicked in. A much stronger one. “Are you all right, sweetheart?”

“I’m lost,” Rudi answered while realizing the words had infinite meanings.

“Where are you trying to go?”

“A friend of mine lives near here. Her name is Maria Gonzales.”

“Oh, I know the Gonzaleses. What a nice family. They live on Overhill Road just up the way. You can’t miss it. It’s a big yellow house with a lovely Nativity scene in the yard.”

“Thank you!” Rudi cried out, and she almost hugged the woman. But she stopped herself and rushed off, I’m sure with the woman trying to make sense of the enigma that had been in front of her.

Rudi rang the doorbell for the second time. But again there was no response, and she began to wonder whether Maria or anyone else was home even though there were plenty of lights on in the house.

The door creaked opened, and there was Maria, looking more than shocked. She was so shocked that she couldn’t say a thing.

“Can I come in?” Rudi pleaded.

Maria turned around, and she listened to the faint voice of a man coming from inside the kitchen before spinning back to Rudi and grabbing her arm. “You’re lucky my dad’s on the phone. Quick.”

Quick was how they snuck up the stairs and into Maria’s bedroom, where Maria locked the door. Finding a flashlight in a drawer, she flipped it on as she turned off the room’s light and sat on the floor with Rudi, who told her everything that had happened from her encounter with Tommy outside the school.

Maria couldn’t help smile. “He’s in love with you. You should be happy. Just about every girl in school is crazy about him.”

Shaking her head, Rudi looked away. “Not me.”

“‘The lady doth protest too much, methinks.’”

Rudi giggled, and she glanced at Maria. “Almost nobody gets that quote right. You must really like Shakespeare.”

“I actually wrote a modern teenage version of *All’s Well That Ends Well* for the Drama Club last spring.”

“*All’s Well That Ends Well?* Isn’t that, isn’t that the one where the woman tricks her husband into sleeping with her by pretending to be someone else?”

“I kinda glossed over that part when I described it to my dad.”

“And you wrote a modern version of it? That’s awesome.”

“The teacher even said I should become a playwright. But it’s silly.”

“Why?”

“How many women playwrights do you know?”

“Lillian Hellman, Lorraine Hansberry, Sophie Treadwell. There are tons of them.”

“I’ve never even heard of those people.”

“Whose fault is that?”

“Don’t change the subject,” Maria insisted.

“There is no subject,” Rudi insisted back.

“That’s not what I see.”

“You need glasses.”

“Maybe it’s you who needs them.”

“How could I be in love with him?” Rudi screeched. “He’s a Republican!”

Again, Maria couldn’t help smile. “I’m no expert, but I don’t think you get to choose.”

“You say you’re no expert, but you sure sound like you’re speaking from experience.”

Maria shrugged in embarrassment.

“I know your dad is pretty strict and all,” Rudi went on, “but you must at least be hot for someone.”

Maria blushed. But she wouldn’t say a thing.

“Come on, spill it,” Rudi exhorted.

Maria was still reluctant. But Rudi continued prodding her, and she relented. “Well, there is this someone.”

“Yeah?”

“We’re always smiling at each other and stuff.”

“What’s his name?”

Again, Maria was reluctant. But Rudi wouldn’t let up, and Maria gave in. “Sam.”

“Sam? Is that the guy . . .”

“Sam . . . antha.”

Moments of uncomfortable silence followed, many of them, and Maria turned off the flashlight.

“Why’d you turn off the light?” Rudi asked.

“You must hate me,” Maria answered.

“Why would I hate you?”

“Because I’m a . . .”

Rudi grabbed the flashlight, and she turned it on. “I think it’s cool.”

“You do?” Maria gasped.

“It takes courage to be different.”

“That’s my problem.”

“What is?”

“I don’t have any courage.”

“Have you talked to this, this Samantha?”

“God, no.”

“Why not?”

“My dad would kill me. I’m not even allowed to talk to boys.”

“Are you gonna live your whole life for your dad? Are you gonna get married and have babies just to make him happy?”

“I don’t know.”

“‘To thine own self be true!’” Rudi hollered.

“Sshhh!” Maria yelped. “My dad would freak out if he found you here.”

“Tomorrow you’re gonna walk right up to this Samantha, whether it’s in the hallway or wherever you two do your smiling at each other, and you’re gonna at least say hello to her.”

“No way.”

“Either you walk up to her or I’ll walk you up. You pick.”

With the sun peeking through his window as it made its way toward the darkening clouds above it, Tommy sat on his bed, much as he had been doing all night, with his head on his knees and his arms around his legs.

*Leave me alone!*

For the trillionth time, he heard the words Rudi had screamed at him the night before. The ones that had given him the out he’d been looking for since he met her. All he had to do to avoid his fate and fulfill his second chance was to do what she wanted and stay away from her.

But he had no more success at convincing himself of this than he had the last time he tried. So he got off his bed. Without showering, he got dressed and sped out of his house on his bike in the lightly-falling rain. Like the day before, he sped all the way to Rudi’s house. But he didn’t bother hiding behind the old brown pickup truck. He stopped in front of her house and waited. He waited and waited.

No one came out of the house, nor was there any indication that anyone was inside, and he couldn’t see the blue sedan anywhere. Glancing at his watch, he saw that school was about to begin. So, with the rain starting to fall harder, he drove to Columbia. He drove there fast. As he stopped at the red light at the corner of Valley and Parker, he noticed Rudi and Maria walking through the parking lot toward the school, and he noticed was how Rudi again wasn’t wearing her coat and that she had on the same clothes as the day before.

Tommy noticed something else. Deke’s Porsche raced into the school’s lot from Parker and came to a halt by the two girls, who stopped and turned toward it as its window rolled down.

The light turned green. But instead of driving down Parker, Tommy jumped the curb, much as he had the day before, and he rode over the grass. But he kept his distance from the Porsche, idling well behind it in the lot. No matter how much he wanted to be brave, he couldn’t.

Slowly, Rudi lowered her head. She kept it that way as she made her way around the car to the passenger door. Which she stepped through despite the pleas of Maria, who was yelling at her in fright.

The Porsche sped off, but Tommy didn’t follow. He watched it race down Parker, feeling more afraid than ever.

Maria saw him and became more frantic. “Aren’t you going to do something?”

He didn’t respond.

“You stupid idiot!” she went on with her arms flailing. “She only went with him because of you!”

Without even realizing it, Tommy gunned the bike, and he followed the Porsche. He followed it to Route 22, a highway that bisected the width of the state. From there Deke turned onto the lot of a seedy motel on the edge of Newark and parked in front of a room in the pouring rain.

Pulling up behind the Porsche, Tommy watched Deke jump out of it and strut to the other side, where Rudi was getting out a lot slower, with a face that was fighting to project apathy and failing miserably at it.

Sneering, Deke grabbed her arm, and he pulled her outside and slammed the door, and he dragged her toward the room.

Tommy called out Rudi’s name from his bike, and she and Deke came to a stop, and they spun toward him in anger.

“What are you doing here?” she hollered.

“What are you?” he hollered back.

Deke took a step toward Tommy. But Rudi stopped him with her arm, and she said something to him under her breath, something that sounded like, “You promised.”

“What’s going on?” Tommy shouted.

“Just go home,” she barked. “Can’t you see it already? I’m trash!”

“That’s not ‘the what I see’!”

“Just go!”

Tommy didn’t, and Deke opened his jacket and put his hand on the gun in his waistband. “Listen to her, man. Unless you wanna end up like that other kike.”

“Let’s just do this,” Rudi growled to Deke, and she grabbed him by the collar of his jacket and dragged him toward the room.

“Sure thing, babe.”

The two reached the room, which Deke unlocked and opened, and the two entered.

“I want you to be my girl!” Tommy screamed.

Deke reacted to this by stopping a few steps into the room, but Rudi didn’t even do this. She continued inside as if she didn’t hear or care.

“I want you to be my girl!” Tommy screamed again.

Slowly, Deke turned, and he glared at Tommy. “Take off while you can.”

Deke slammed the door in front of himself. Hearing this lock, Tommy gazed into nowhere, frozen with fear.

*Take off while you can*.

These words seemed familiar to Tommy. At first, he thought he must’ve heard Deke say them. But then he recalled it had been someone else. This led him to glance around. Slowly, he glanced, and a little behind him to his right he saw the blue sedan and the FBI agent inside it, who was sitting in the driver’s seat with the window open and smirking at him.

The sound of a lamp crashing to the floor sent Tommy’s head spinning toward the motel room. “You’re not getting off that easy!” Deke howled from inside. “You think I don’t know you’re testifying against me?”

“I’m not!” Rudi howled back.

“That’s right you’re not!”

The two began fighting, and this was followed by one of them landing hard on the floor. “I guess you forgot who taught you!” Deke shrieked. “I taught you everything! I made you a man, better than a man! And all you wanna do is screw Jews!”

Tommy got off his bike, and he took a step toward the room. But he didn’t take another. “There’s nothing you can do!” he hollered at himself. “He’d kill you!”

The fighting continued inside the room, and Rudi cried out in pain while no longer sounding so tough. She sounded more like a frightened little girl. The one that had always been hiding under the toughness looking for a way out.

Tommy spun back to the sedan and the man inside it. “Aren’t you going to do something?”

The man smirked some more. He couldn’t hide the glee oozing out of him. “All in good time, young man. All in good time.”

“What are you waiting for?”

“Backup. You can’t expect me to confront a dangerous armed suspect without backup, can you?”

Everything became clear to Tommy. He realized that it must’ve been the FBI who told Deke where Rudi was and what she was about to do. He realized that they had no intention of letting her testify. She was an addict with a long record. She was unreliable. But the man in the car, he’d be the perfect witness to murder, the perfect means toward a conviction, which was all that mattered.

Rudi screamed for help, and Tommy felt himself start toward her. He went knowing that he really didn’t have a choice in what he did and never had. He knew free will was nothing but a joke. If given a million second chances, he’d make the same choice every time.

He’d choose her.

He rushed at the door and was just about to slam into it.

There was silence on the line after I finished reading the entry. There was a lot of it, and it went on and on. I didn’t know what to say to Rudi, and I could tell she was crying even if I couldn’t hear it.

“Call me tomorrow,” she mumbled with her voice barely a whisper.

“Tomorrow is Sunday,” I let her know. “There’s no mail.”

“Call me anyway.”

She was about to hang up, but I couldn’t let her go like this. “I don’t think I ever told you how I came into this story.”

“No. You never did.”

On a morning before dawn, I woke when I heard my grandparents arguing in the kitchen below my room, completely unaware of how this would change my life.

Groggily, I rose to my waist, and I grasped that my grandparents were yelling in German. This was unusual. Most of the time, they spoke English while often breaking into Czech, a language associated with beautiful memories for both of them. German, on the other hand, was associated only with nightmares, even if it was their native language. The only time I ever heard them speak it was when they didn’t want me to understand something. Still, I could pick up one thing my grandmother said as she pleaded with my grandfather. “She . . . she’s a Nazi.”

Grandpa didn’t reply. All I heard was quiet. I kept hearing it until the kitchen door swung open, which was followed by the unmistakable footsteps of my grandfather shuffling outside. These continued to the side of the house, where he opened and closed the metal garbage can there before he shuffled back inside.

I couldn’t control my curiosity of this. Hurriedly, I dressed and left my room, and I snuck down the stairs and out the front door. With the sun beginning to peek above the horizon of our neighborhood, I made my way to the garbage can and opened it. In the faint light, I saw a crumpled page from a newspaper, and I pulled it out and uncrumpled it. It was from the *Star Ledger* and the headline read: “Drug Dealer Shot Dead in Newark Motel Room.”

Underneath this were the mugshots of two people: a man with a shaved head and a tattooed neck along with a punked-out teenage girl who otherwise looked a lot like me. It was like staring at myself in a funhouse mirror. I wasn’t exactly a normal-looking teenager in the early 1980s, with my wild curly brown hair and scruffy face, but I looked like the cover of *Tiger Beat* in comparison to her.

I don’t know how long I gazed at her image. But feeling suddenly cold, I tried reading the story. The text, though, was too small to read in the morning light. So I snuck back inside the house with the paper and rushed up the stairs into my room, where I read the article on my bed.

What caught my attention right off was that the circumstances of what had happened were still unclear. All they knew for certain was that an unnamed minor had broken into the motel room where Deke Cox and Gertrud Weiss had been fighting and that Deke attacked the boy, who lost so much blood that the doctors weren’t sure if he’d make it. The other thing that stood out in the article was how both Deke and Gertrud were skinheads with long criminal records and ties to neo-Nazis and how they were both thought to be involved in the killing of a Jewish Rutgers student earlier that fall.

This couldn’t fully sink into my head. That I could have a twin sister living within driving distance of me was incredible enough but that she was a skinhead and possibly a murderer of Jews was too much. My instinct was to rip the paper apart and at least try to forget about it.

But again I couldn’t control my curiosity. So I read the article again. I read it many times, and I saw what it didn’t say was as important as what it had. There was no mention of who killed Deke or what had happened to the girl I knew had to be my sister. The only clue they gave was that she and the boy went to a high school somewhere in the area. But this wouldn’t be much of a clue, I would soon learn, after I rushed downstairs into my grandparents’ library.

Some suburban families build pools while others build gardens or game rooms. Mine built a library. It was huge, with many interconnected rooms and more books than at my high school library. They even had some rare books, such as a French edition of Nikolai Gogol’s *Dead Souls* that was illustrated by a young Marc Chagall, whose imagery would haunt many of my childhood nights.

The library included a bookcase of every telephone directory in New Jersey. I found the one for Essex County along with those for the adjoining counties. While browsing through them, I discovered there were dozens of high schools within an hour’s drive of the motel, and they were spread out everywhere. Finding her seemed an impossible task, until I remembered I was the grandson of a man who had made such quests seem ordinary.

I left the library and stepped through the kitchen doors, and I saw my grandparents sitting in front of the white porcelain table that had been there for as long as I could remember. The two weren’t even trying to eat the breakfast in front of them as they gazed into space.

“Hey,” I uttered as I nervously stopped in front of them.

Neither replied. They didn’t seem to know I was there.

“Grandpa,” I went on, “remember how I was telling you that I’m taking a film class at school?

“*Cože?”* he muttered without looking at me.

For some time now, my grandfather had been suffering from a form of dementia. It was one that fluctuated. Often he’d be quite lucid and at other times he’d be in another place and time. Then there were times like this, where it was difficult to tell which.

“For my class project,” I told him while hoping for the best, “I’ve decided to make a documentary on New Jersey. I’m really gonna need your car in the afternoons for a while.”

It took a while, but he spun toward me. “*Jistě*. Sure.”

I nodded. I nodded while feeling a little guilty about lying to him. But I justified it by telling myself that he would’ve done the same.

Every weekday afternoon, I came home early and drove to a different high school and sometimes two if they were near each other. I would show the picture of the strange girl in the newspaper clipping to students and teachers and anyone else who walked by. But no one knew her. None of them even seemed to recognize her from the news, which had been a big story for a few days on the local TV news.

I don’t know how many times I almost gave up looking for her. But it was a lot. It wasn’t just the futility of the search. I wasn’t sure what I’d say to her if I found her. I even wondered if I was secretly doing my best not to find her so I’d have a convenient excuse for not facing her. Still, every afternoon I got into Grandpa’s beat-up gray Olds and continued to look.

Finally, I reached a dead end. I had been to every high school in the area and even to a few outside it and was no closer to finding her than when I had started. I told myself that I had no choice but to give up.

“How is that documentary of yours coming?” Grandpa asked one night during dinner.

I shrugged. “Everywhere is the same.”

“What do you mean?”

“Everywhere in New Jersey looks the same.”

“You are not looking hard enough. There are gems everywhere in this state, even in Newark. Especially there.”

“Hillside too,” Grandma interjected. “Some of my favorite homes are there. Of course, they cannot compare to my old villa in Vinohrady. But nothing can.”

Grandpa nodded his head a couple of times. “Hillside is a perfect example. Who would expect to see such beautiful homes on the border of Newark and Elizabeth?”

“Hillside?” I muttered. “Isn’t that, isn’t that where Pingry is?”

“Exactly my point,” he replied while pointing at me. “You would never think that the most prestigious private school in the state would be in Hillside. But there it is.”

Only at this moment did I realize that I hadn’t checked any private schools. I must’ve just assumed that a girl who looked like my sister could’ve only gone to a public one. So the next afternoon I drove to Hillside and the leafy campus of Pingry, where rich kids from all over Northern New Jersey went. Years earlier, it seemed like half my six-grade class went there instead of the local junior high, which I guess had more to do with the racial makeup of the school than its academics. As I parked in the school lot, I even recognized a guy I had once been friends with as he jumped into an Alfa and drove off.

Like I had at the other places I’d been, I asked anyone I passed if they knew the girl in the picture, despite feeling even less hopeful than normal, and I was not surprised that everyone shook their heads.

So I decided not only to leave but to forget about finding my sister for good. But as I approached Grandpa’s car, I came upon three boys, and I showed them the photo anyway.

“Isn’t she the one who shot that drug dealer?” one of them asked, a skinny kid with short curly brown hair and light blue eyes and a wardrobe straight out of *GQ*.

“How do you know she shot him?” I asked back, having never discovered who fired the gun.

He shrugged. “There are rumors.”

“I guess she doesn’t go here. Do you happen to know what school she does?”

“Columbia. A neighbor of mine was telling me about her. He goes there.”

I shook my head. “I checked Columbia a few weeks ago. Nobody knew her.”

“It doesn’t surprise me.”

“What do you mean?”

“There are rumors,” he said again with another shrug as he and the others walked off.

“What rumors?”

“I’m not saying,” he bellowed, and I could almost see the smirk on his face.

I again came home early from school, and I again grabbed my grandfather’s car keys off the bureau by the dining room table and headed out. Though I knew I was actually heading somewhere or could hope I was. But I still wasn’t sure that it was to a good place.

I made my way toward our house’s front door, and I saw my grandfather asleep in front of the living-room TV on the couch, much as he’d been doing in the afternoon for years. He’d been retired since I came to live with him and Grandma when I was a small child, and he didn’t have much to do during the day, especially as Grandma still worked. She was a decade younger than him and was the director of the local YM-YWHA. So he was left alone a lot. Along with this it seemed he’d run out of steam or any place to use the little he had left, and I would always wonder if this was the cause of the stupors he’d find himself in.

Gazing at him that day as I walked by, I wished he could’ve been with me. I wished I could’ve given him some purpose, and I really could have used his help.

I left my house and drove twenty minutes to Maplewood. Like I had when I was there before, I parked the Olds on Valley Road in front of a little diner called Ralph’s, and I crossed the street as kids streamed out of Columbia High School and walked through the parking lot. Like usual, I showed the photograph to everyone I passed. Like usual, they all shook their heads. Then, not far from the school doors, I approached two girls. One was small and conservatively dressed while the other was tall and redheaded. The small girl slowed in increasing shock when she saw me before coming to a stop a few steps from me. “Are you her brother?”

“I think so,” I said.

She rushed up and hugged me, which more than surprised me, and she whispered, “I’m Maria, Rudi’s best friend.”

“Rudi?” I uttered before realizing that no teenage girl in America would want to be called Gertrud and certainly no punk.

Maria broke her embrace, and the two of us gazed at each other.

“You’re her best friend?” I stammered as I tried to corroborate the image of the girl in the photo with the one in front of me.

“She never told me she had a brother.”

“She probably doesn’t know. Do you know where I can find her?”

“She calls me every few days from a pay phone, but she won’t tell me where she is. I’m really worried.”

“What about the boy?”

“The boy?”

“The one who got beaten up in that motel room.”

“Tommy Goodwin. He’s at St. Barnabas. That’s a hospital in Livingston, just off South Orange Avenue.”

“He’s still in the hospital?”

“Yeah. I’m not sure what’s wrong with him.”

“I’m pretty sure I know the rest,” Rudi interrupted over the phone.

“Not everything,” I insisted. “And I don’t know everything either.”

“It’ll have to wait till tomorrow. I have to get up early in the morning.”

“I don’t work tomorrow, so I can call you earlier.”

“Call me anytime after noon.”

Because I wasn’t working the next day, I didn’t need to get a bus pass that night. Still, I noticed Josh as I went by the office. I gazed at him and was still thinking about him as I made my way to the dorm and my bed.

*Who watches the watchers?*

I didn’t sleep much that night, but it wasn’t because of the snoring, which was even louder than normal. Nor was it because of the waves of darkness and demons, which never came. While I stared at the ceiling, I tried to figure out what I should do about Josh, and I wasn’t sure if it would be anything.

the fifth night

I actually volunteered to do the house laundry in the morning. I did it every Sunday morning. It was the worst and hardest job at the shelter: washing all the towels and bedding from the previous day and putting them on the clotheslines behind the dining hall before collecting and folding them once they were dry. But it had a perk: I got to wash my own laundry first after I finished.

I showered that morning and brought the house laundry cart into the courtyard, where I saw Phil talking to Sharon. Phil was the most-liked person at the shelter, a veteran who saw action in Vietnam. Though he didn’t like talking about that. Instead, he would regale us with stories from the set of *Road House*, in which he had a small role as one of the drunks at the bar. A role he was all too qualified to play.

“You know I don’t like complaining,” he said to Sharon while looking and sounding upset.

“What is it?” she asked.

“I woke up this morning covered in urine.”

“You what?”

“Theo, the guy in the bunk above me, doesn’t like going to the bathroom in the middle of the night. So he uses plastic bottles. But this morning one of them broke open, and it spilled all over me.”

“I’ll handle it,” she told him as she walked away in disgust.

I tried not to grin at Phil. I tried hard. But I couldn’t help myself.

He grinned back. “When it rains, it pours!”

With the sun bearing down on me, and while waiting for two big loads of towels to finish washing, in the courtyard I noticed a married couple named Billy and Jennifer a few booths from me.

It wasn’t easy being a couple at the shelter. They weren’t even allowed to hold hands much less have marital relations. For that they had to find secluded places outside the shelter. An unwritten list of these was passed between couples, along with a creative set of euphemisms, with new places added and others removed when circumstances warranted it.

Billy and Jennifer were only a few years younger than me, but they looked like teenagers the way they were ogling each other. They managed to stay in love despite their troubles. Maybe it was what kept them looking forward.

They weren’t the only people I noticed in the courtyard that morning. I noticed Josh as he strutted out of the place at the end of his shift. He strutted like he owned it and us.

*Who watches the watchers?*

The words again came into my head, and I couldn’t get them to leave. This led me to take out my cheap plastic phone. I stared at it while trying to decide whether to cross the Rubicon and learn more about Josh.

With both a sigh and a shrug, I loaded a web browser and did some searching. I discovered that the FBI provided access to their criminal database through an API, which lets programmers use this data in their applications. The agency, of course, protected access to the sensitive information the API exposed. This was done through the use of keys, which are kind of like long, unbreakable passwords. However, I knew from experience that this system of protection was far from infallible. While there are secure ways of handling API keys, programmers are often lazy and include them directly in their code. So I searched the web, looking for one of these keys in public code repositories.

I couldn’t find any, which meant I’d have to search private repositories for them, which wasn’t exactly legal. This gave me some pause but not enough. I knew that, even if someone found out what I was doing and cared, I couldn’t easily be found. More importantly, I couldn’t make myself care about getting caught.

Two of the biggest sites for private repositories were GitHub and GitLab. As the latter was geared more toward software development, I tried that first. On their website, they publicly disclosed vulnerabilities they’d discovered over the years. One of these gave attackers control through a bug that occurred when importing files from GitHub. While this had been fixed, I was able to modify it and unfix it. This allowed me to spawn what is known as a shell, from which I searched through the repositories, and I found a key in one of them.

The rest should’ve been easy. I installed a terminal on my phone, which turned it into a low-end computer, and all I had to do was write a simple Python script that used the key I had found to access the FBI’s database and list out Josh’s record. But I hadn’t programmed in a long time. So I had a lot of bugs in my script and had a lot of trouble getting them out of it.

While gazing into the code on the screen of my phone, I heard Metallica’s “Enter Sandman” playing.

Turning my head, I saw Mitchell, who slept in the bunk below me, listening to the song a few booths behind mine.

“Do you know that black people invented rock ’n’ roll?” he mentioned without glancing from his phone. “Not to mention blues, hip-hop, R&B, soul, reggae, jazz . . .”

“You also invented hardcore punk.”

“We did?”

“I’ll show you.”

Quickly, he sat beside me, and I took a break from my sleuthing to show him a video of a pair of Bad Brains’ concerts at CBGB from the early eighties. The two of us watched the great band in its prime as punks of all colors slammed into each other in front of H.R. and sometimes on top of him, creating a giant and beautiful mosaic while blissfully unaware that someone might’ve found this unusual.

I returned to my Python script, and I was finally able to traverse the JSON objects that the FBI’s API returned, and Josh’s record spewed out on my phone’s terminal.

I learned from this that he’d been arrested three times: for false imprisonment, attempted kidnapping, and assault. But only for the assault was he actually charged, and that was dismissed before it reached trial. Which was likely how he passed the background check the shelter must’ve made before hiring him.

I knew none of this proved anything. It certainly didn’t prove he was the third man the police were looking for. He might’ve even been innocent of all three charges, however unlikely it was. So again I begged myself to forget it and “smile and wave,” as Matt had put it. But this didn’t make me forget anything. It only did the opposite.

Mitchell and I weren’t the only ones that day engaging in an eighties flashback at the shelter.

After finishing my own laundry, I walked into the courtyard and saw Nicole, Allison, and a few others playing Trivial Pursuit. They were playing a special edition of it that focused on the decade I had come of age.

It only took a few minutes of watching them to make me feel old, when none of them knew what had happened to the Space Shuttle Challenger or what famine inspired the songs “Do They Know It’s Christmas?” and “We Are the World.” The 1980s were as disconnected from them as the 1880s were from me. But it got me thinking of my own experiences during that time, and I found a quiet corner of the courtyard and called Rudi.

“You wanna hear the story of how I met Tommy?” I asked.

“I told you, I already know this,” she grumbled.

“Not everything.”

I stepped up to the receptionist in the waiting area of St. Barnabas and asked for Tommy’s room.

The man looked it up. “He’s in the Isolation Ward.”

“Isolation?” I mumbled.

“It’s for isolating infectious or possibly infectious patients.”

I approached Tommy’s door, passing various signs posted on the ones leading to his warning of the dangers of being there.

I wasn’t that scared. Maybe it was because I felt the same kind of immortality many young people feel, or maybe I was more scared of something else.

Hearing labored breathing and some coughing, I came to Tommy’s open door. I peeked my head inside and saw a badly-beaten boy my age lying in a bed as he glumly wrote in a notebook. It looked as if he were making out his will.

Despite this, I couldn’t help feel dislike toward him. He was the kind of guy I’d always disliked and sometimes hated. He was perfect in every way, even with his bruises, or maybe it was because of them. If this was how he looked beaten and unshowered and unshaven, I could only wonder what he looked like before. To me, Tommy was the kind of guy who never seemed to have a bad day. The kind who was so different from me. Only at that moment I couldn’t escape the truth that he didn’t seem so different.

Softly, I tapped on his door, and he turned toward me with the same kind of shock as Maria. “You, you’re her . . .”

“Maybe,” I said. “Do you know where she is?”

He responded with a long series of hacking coughs before he returned to his writing without answering me.

I wasn’t sure what to do. Noticing a pen and one of those little yellow sticky pads on a table by the wall, I stepped toward it. “I’ll just leave my name and number.”

“Keep your distance from me,” he bellowed as he continued to write.

I put down my information and glanced at him. “If you see her, please tell her, tell her I’d really like to talk to her.”

I finished and turned around, and I saw a nurse enter the room. She had a mask across her face and rubber gloves on her hands as she pushed a medical cart toward Tommy. Though what I really noticed was how she looked as if she were approaching her own death.

I stepped out of the elevator on the ground floor of the hospital, and I started through the waiting area. This was when I first saw her, when I first saw my sister. She was slouching in an easy chair in the distance, looking as if she hadn’t slept in months, with her arms crossed and her face much like the one in the mugshot in the paper, apart from the black streaks of tears that had run down her face.

Now that I’d found her, I wanted to run, especially as I could tell she hadn’t seen me. I eyed the exits and headed toward them. But I didn’t do this for long. I came to a stop while looking for the courage to both face her and discover the truth about her.

It took a long time for this courage to come, and there wasn’t much of it. But there was enough to turn around and slowly approach her. Actually, “slowly” isn’t the right word. Even “inched” wouldn’t describe it right. It must’ve taken me five minutes before I was close enough for her to notice me.

Strangely, while she clearly recognized my resemblance to her, this didn’t seem to surprise her. It only made her angry.

“Hi,” I mumbled once in front of her, unable to come up with anything better, despite having practiced this moment from the time I found out about her. “I think I’m . . .”

“My brother,” she growled as she wiped her face, which only made things worse.

“I . . .”

“What do you want?” she growled next.

“What do I want?” I uttered, feeling an anger of my own. “Out of nowhere, I find I have a twin sister and that she might be a Nazi or a neo-Nazi and . . .”

“And a murderer?”

“I . . .”

“Well, now you can see it’s all true. So you can go back to your little life and forget all about me, just like I’m gonna forget about you. I’ll forget about you the moment you walk out that door.”

I couldn’t breathe. I gasped for air and stumbled toward the exits without saying anything more. I kept stumbling as I got through the automatic doors, where I stopped and keeled over.

I interrupted my own story. I guess I needed a little break. So I asked Rudi what she had been doing between the night at the motel and the day I met her in the hospital.

She couldn’t tell me much. This was because she couldn’t remember much.

Oddly, one of her few vivid memories was of a dream. In this she woke in a hospital bed in pain. It was so bad that she screamed and cursed. Still, no one came. So she stumbled off the bed and into the hallway, where she felt a burst of loneliness in her empty surroundings. There was no one anywhere.

She started down the corridor and came upon a supply closet. Feeling even more pain, she flung open its door and found a glass cabinet filled with all sorts of pill bottles. The cabinet was locked, so she smashed the glass with her fist and grabbed a bottle at random, and she tore off its top. But it was empty. So she chucked it onto the floor and grabbed another. It was empty too. So was the next and the one after that. They were all empty, and she again screamed and cursed, and she shook her bloody fist, with her pain and loneliness worse than before.

This led her back into the hallway and down it, passing empty room after empty room. She passed hundreds of them before she came to Tommy’s. He was lying in a bed badly beaten, but still he was smiling. He was smiling at Darlene, who held his hand from a chair by the bed. Smiling at both of them was Mrs. Goodwin as she watched the two from her own chair by the door.

Rudi called out Tommy’s name, but he wouldn’t answer. He wouldn’t acknowledge she was there. This made her frantic, more than before. She hollered and yelled and even hit him, but this did nothing. It was like she wasn’t there.

Then she woke, for real. Like in her dream, she was in pain from the beating she had taken. Like then, she screamed and cursed.

“Rudi?” came a soft voice from her right.

She turned toward it, and she saw Maria sitting in the chair beside her bed.

Rudi spun from her in embarrassment. “What are you doing here?”

“Maybe next time you’re in trouble . . . maybe you tell your best friend.”

Feeling overwhelmed with emotion, Rudi turned to the girl and hugged her. She hugged her as hard as she could.

Remembering Tommy, she broke her embrace and asked Maria about him.

“He’s in another ward,” she said. “I went to see him, but he wasn’t awake.”

“I gotta see him,” Rudi screeched as she crawled out of bed. But she fell right to the floor.

“You’re not going anywhere,” Maria told her as she helped her back in the bed. “Not for a while.”

“How is he? How’s Tommy?”

“I don’t know.”

Rudi lingered in bed for days, strung out on the drugs the hospital had been giving her for the pain and with her mind on one thing.

*I want you to be my girl*.

A few weeks earlier, these would’ve been the most ridiculous words she ever heard. But now they were all she could think about. She thought not only about them and their meaning and how Tommy had screamed them to her outside the motel room but how she had wanted to run into his arms when she heard them. She only didn’t because she hadn’t been there for herself. She told me that ignoring him had been the first selfless thing she ever did.

*I want you to be my girl*.

The words dragged her out of bed, and she went looking for Tommy. For what seemed like forever, she stumbled through the corridors of the hospital, with his words echoing in her head. But when she found him, the words were replaced by others.

“Leave me alone!” he screamed at her in between his coughs, and he wouldn’t let her get anywhere near him. He wouldn’t even look at her, not only at that moment but whenever she came to his door.

Then he was gone. For a reason she couldn’t find out, he was transferred to a different hospital. Realizing that her dream had come true, she left the hospital, even though she was far from all right. This was where things became blurry, as most of the bottles she’d encounter weren’t so empty. In the bits and pieces she could recall, she was stumbling through streets and hallways or crawling across floors, with both sets of Tommy’s words fighting it out in her head.

One day she came upon a library. Recalling the safety one of them had provided her when she was little, she went inside, and she stole a paperback copy of Carson McCullers’ *The Heart Is a Lonely Hunter*. She didn’t even know why, especially as she had read it years earlier.

Night after night, she clutched the book, with the words on its tattered cover pushing her toward the set of words she wanted to believe. They pushed her all the way to Tommy’s new hospital. Still, he wouldn’t look at her or talk to her, and she found herself slumped over a chair in its waiting room. What she was waiting for she didn’t know. She only knew it was the only place to go.

I noticed it was getting dark as I leaned against the wall outside the entrance of St. Barnabas. But I wasn’t sure what to do. While I couldn’t leave, I couldn’t face Rudi again.

The automatic doors opened, and I glanced at them. There she was, staring at me with her hands on her hips.

I tried to get some words out. “How, how’d you know I’d be out here?”

“Because that’s what I’d do.”

She leaned against the wall next to me. With both of us facing forward, we stood silently for God knows how long.

“I once saw a picture of us when we were little,” she mentioned. “Real little. You couldn’t tell us apart.”

“You can now.”

We both laughed. We laughed for God knows how long.

“I don’t remember you at all,” I went on.

“Me neither. They must’ve split us up pretty soon after that picture was taken.”

“But why?”

“I suppose, I suppose my stepdad had no use for a boy.”

These words caused me to shutter. I had always thought that I had it bad growing up. But I knew now I’d been wrong.

“What about . . .” I whispered while trying to figure out what to ask next. “What about our dad?”

She shook her head. “I don’t know who he is. I’m not even sure Mom knows.”

“And where is she?”

“That I don’t know either. And that’s the one thing I’m grateful for.”

“I guess she was pretty messed up.”

“You can say that.”

“She went through a lot.”

“She wasn’t the only one.”

“She was born in Prague,” I said. I said this with unease, knowing I was about to defend a woman that couldn’t be defended. “But after the war, they deported her and her Czech mother to Germany because her dead father had been a German officer.”

This surprised Rudi and caused her to spin toward me. “So I’m not Jewish.”

“You are. We both are. It’s complicated. My grandparents . . . I mean, our grandparents, they adopted Mom.”

“What happened to her mom?”

“They were living in a displaced-persons camp. While the Czechs had hated them because they considered them German, the Germans hated them because they didn’t. Some people in the camp, they killed her mother. They killed her right in front of her and almost killed her too. Grandma says that she couldn’t make it through a night without pills. Try to remember that, try to remember it the next time you hate her. That’s what I do.”

Rudi gaped at me in confusion. “I don’t understand. If her father was a Nazi, why would Jews adopt her?”

“It’s hard to explain. Grandpa knew her mom a little, and I think she reminded him of his late first wife. But there was more to it than that. Grandma couldn’t have children of her own, and Grandpa didn’t have any either. Then came this chance for both of them. I think they also wanted to see Mom as some kind of Ruth.”

“Ruth?”

“From the Bible. She wasn’t Jewish but was married to one. When he died, instead of returning to her people, she joined her mother-in-law and became a Jew.”

“But our mom was still the child of a Nazi. How could they adopt her?”

“Maybe they were trying to fix the world or their little piece of it. I know it sounds corny, but it’s kinda part of who we are as a people.”

“I don’t think it’s corny. But they failed. They failed badly.”

“Maybe. But I wouldn’t be here if they hadn’t tried. Nor would you. So maybe, maybe we don’t know yet if they succeeded.”

Rudi didn’t reply.

“I saw Tommy earlier,” I told her.

“He won’t see me.”

“Why?”

“None of this would’ve happened if I hadn’t showed up here . . . if he hadn’t lov . . .”

“So you two . . .”

She shrugged.

“Is he gonna be okay?”

“He’s got some form of pneumonia that’s been going around, and they’re having a hard time treating it.”

“Was that why he was in isolation and why his nurse was wearing a mask and gloves and looking so terrified?”

“She’s an idiot, that woman. His doctor doesn’t wear that crap around him. He’s not terrified of him.”

“I heard a little about what happened to Tommy, in the newspaper and on TV. But they didn’t seem to know much.”

“This guy Deke, he was beating me. Actually, he was killing me. He only didn’t because Tommy broke into the motel room.”

With her head shaking, Rudi added, “I can’t understand why he did. He had no chance against Deke. He had to know this. So why would he do it?”

“Maybe the alternative would’ve been worse.”

“Tommy surprised Deke, and he threw him into a wall. But when he kneeled on the floor to check on me, Deke jumped him. He was beating him worse than me. Then I saw Deke’s gun on the floor, and I shot him.”

“Are you in trouble for that?”

“Are you kidding? If I had been anyone else, they would’ve given me a medal.”

“Are you all right?”

“I’m fine. I’m not the one in a hospital bed.”

“What about, what about the other boy?”

“What other boy?”

“The one they say got killed a few months ago.”

“Are you asking me if I killed him?”

“I don’t know what I’m asking.”

Spinning toward me, she expressed the same anger as before. “And if I told you I killed him?”

I looked into her eyes. I looked into them deeply. “I wouldn’t believe it.”

Again, she turned from me.

“Where you staying?” I asked.

“Around.”

“I’m sure Grandpa and Grandma—”

“—I don’t want anything from them.”

“They didn’t know about you. I’m sure of it. They would’ve never let you rot like that.”

Rudi didn’t even react to this. I still had a million things to ask, but I couldn’t think of any. So I pushed myself off the wall. “Can I see you again?”

“I’m here all the time.”

I visited Rudi at the hospital every day.

It went slowly at first. Some days barely a few words passed between us. But we both loosened up after a while. I told her about my “little life” and our grandparents, and she told me about herself, and I learned just how alike we were despite how differently we had grown up. I had expected us to have the same birthday and similar aptitudes, but I found out we listened to a lot of the same music and had read a lot of the same books, even unusual ones like Miguel de Unamuno’s *Mist* and Kōbō Abe’s *The Woman in the Dunes*. Though I guess this shouldn’t have surprised me, as both books were about people who only thought they were in control of their fate, and I can see how this would’ve appealed to both of us.

Still, Rudi and I were different in many ways, and not just how we dressed or wore our hair. She had this strength I didn’t. It wasn’t her physical prowess. That’s not strength. Any coward can hit someone. Her strength came from her ability to charge ahead no matter what was in her way and to never give in to anything, much like she was doing with Tommy. At the same time, there was this warmth under her strength. A warmth that was always beyond what I could give. Her smile would forever be unexpected, but it always came. When it did, it would light up everything around her.

So, regardless of her flaws, and there were many, I would come to see Rudi as a perfected me. The me I always wanted to be but never could or would.

One brutally cold afternoon, I was shivering as I walked to the hospital from the parking lot. Instead of finding Rudi in her usual chair, I saw her standing outside the doors and looking frantic. She was shaking all over.

I hurried up to her and asked her what was wrong.

“Tommy’s gone,” she screeched.

“Gone?” I uttered in shock, thinking the worse.

“He left the hospital.”

“And went where?”

“Nobody knows. Or cares. One of the nurses was even smirking about it. I’m almost broke her teeth.”

“I thought you said he was still sick.”

“He’s really sick. I gotta find him.”

“All right. I’ll be back in an hour.”

“Where you going?” she howled as I hurried off.

“To get help,” I yelled.

Grandpa turned off the TV in the living room with the remote, and he frowned as he looked up at me from the couch before shaking his head. “I cannot do it.”

“She’s not a Nazi,” I insisted. “She’s my sister. She’s your granddaughter.”

Again, he shook his head. “Your grandmother, she would never forgive me. You have no idea what she went through with your mother. She cannot go through that again.”

I sat next to him and begged. “Please, Grandpa. You’re the only one who can help her.”

“It seems you did a pretty good job of finding her.”

“Only because you gave me the most important clue, without even trying to give me one. I also knew where to look. But Tommy could be anywhere.”

“You know very well that I cannot help anyone anymore. Look at me. I am a useless old man who spends the few good days he has in front of these idiot boxes.”

“I know you can do this. We can do it together.”

Grandpa thought about it. He thought about it awhile, but he shook his head once more.

“Just talk to her for a few minutes,” I pleaded. “How can that hurt?”

Rudi was looking even more anxious when my grandfather and I approached her by the entrance of St. Barnabas. She looked like she was coming apart.

Grandpa had been hesitant the whole way there. But when he saw his granddaughter for the first time outside of her mugshot, his hesitancy grew. I thought I’d have to drag him to her.

Rudi didn’t seem pleased to see him either. Her fists became clenched and her nostrils flared as we came to a slow stop in front of her.

“Sorry it took so long,” I mumbled.

She pointed at Grandpa and snarled. “Who’s that?”

“Your grandfather.”

Rudi spun from both of us, and she crossed her arms. “I told you, I don’t want anything from him.”

“Remember when I said he was a police detective? What I didn’t tell you was that he was a really good detective.”

“In what century?”

“This one,” Grandpa deadpanned.

“He can find Tommy,” I went on while trying to hide my grin. “He might be the only one who can.”

“Did I ever tell you how I once found Franz Kafka?” Grandpa asked me.

“Yes, Grandpa,” I answered with some exasperation. “Lots of times.”

“Ah, yes, but your sister, she has not heard this story. You see, Kafka was not yet a famous writer. So when he went missing, no one cared. But his family was quite alarmed. His sister . . .”

Grandpa couldn’t finish, as Rudi sighed loudly enough to drown him out. Uncrossing her arms, she turned back to us. “All right.”

“First of all,” Grandpa said, “how do you know this Tommy fellow of yours is really lost? Kids run away and return. Your mother did thousands of times.”

“You don’t understand. He needs to get back to the hospital right now. His life depends on it.”

It was now Grandpa’s turn to sigh. “Have you checked his home?”

“I called. But he hasn’t been there. He and his mother have been fighting. They’ve been fighting over me. I don’t think she’s even been to the hospital to see him.”

“Where else could he be?”

“There’s this waterfall he goes to, but you’d never find it. I know I can’t. I’ve tried more than once.”

Grandpa pointed behind himself, toward the endless trees in the distance. “The one in the reservation over there? Behind Grunnings?”

“Yeah,” Rudi muttered in surprise.

“What about friends or relatives?”

“I don’t know.”

“Do you have a picture of him?”

Rudi pulled a page from a phone book out of her bag. “I don’t have a picture, but his mother must. I can give you her address.”

“All right. I will look for this Tommy. But you must understand that it does not work like in these TV shows you Americans watch, where they solve everything in exactly one hour. It takes time.”

“He doesn’t have any.”

“Meanwhile, I know some people who live not far from your school. You can stay with them.”

Once again, Rudi became surprised. “What?”

“And you will return to school.”

“The hell I will!”

“I was too lenient with your mother. Because of everything she had been through, I let her get away with everything. This time, I will practice that, that . . .”

Grandpa couldn’t think of the words he wanted, and he got lost in his thoughts. He was so lost that he just stood there in a daze as he mumbled to himself. “*Jak se řekne?”*

This jogged his memory. He smiled and snapped his fingers. “‘Tough love.’ I will practice that ‘tough love.’”

“Look—” Rudi began.

“—If I had done this with your mother, maybe she would be the one to tell you what to do. Maybe she would not even have to. But I am smart enough to learn from my mistakes. So these terms are, how do you say, nonnegotiable.”

Rudi thought it over. She did for a long time. “I want updates every day.”

“We can meet in front of your school when it lets out. Do we have a deal?”

Again, Rudi thought it over. She again thought it over for a long time.

Grandpa and I waited in his Olds, which we had parked outside Columbia on Parker Avenue, and we listened to a haunting rendition of Giovanni Battista Pergolesi’s *Stabat Mater* playing from a cassette in the car’s stereo. The two women singing it seemed to be emptying themselves onto us.

When I was growing up, I never heard Grandpa listen to this music. But in recent years I’d often found him doing so, especially the last movement, “Quando corpus morietur.” Pergolesi wrote the composition during the last days of his life when he wasn’t much older than Tommy, and this movement in particular touches upon this:

*While my form here fades,*

*May my soul Thy goodness praise.*

I once asked Grandpa why he was listening to it so much, considering it was a Catholic hymn. He answered that music had no religion and that a Jewish choir had many times performed a rendition of Verdi’s *Requiem* at Theresienstadt that could never be forgotten. He said they sang it as if the words were their own and had flowed from their tongues from birth. “Oh, if only you could have heard the soprano sing ‘Libera me’ at the end of it,” he told me with a gentle smile and a slight shake of his head. “It was not just her voice begging for deliverance. It was all of ours. You could hear them in the echoes everywhere, and I tell you even God Himself must have been in tears.”

Looking back at this now, I think Grandpa’s reasons for listening to *Stabat Mater* went beyond this. Similar to what *Mist* and *The Woman in the Dunes* had meant for Rudi and I, I think the musicwas a means of accepting fates he could no longer control.

The school let out. It seemed a thousand people pushed their way through the doors at once.

Rudi wandered through them, among all the people hanging outside.

I noticed right away how everyone was avoiding her. It was as if they were frightened of her. At first, I figured this was something normal. But then I saw Maria avoiding her. The girl who was supposedly her best friend and who was dragged away by the tall redheaded girl I had seen her with on the day I met her.

Rudi ignored this. Though I could see it was bothering her as she stopped and searched, presumably for us. She looked like the loneliest person on earth.

I opened my door and stuck my head out. “Rudi!”

She turned and saw me, and she hurried toward our car and inside it.

Grandpa lowered the music a bit, and he and I looked at Rudi, who anxiously gasped, “Well?”

“Mrs. Goodwin was kind enough to give me a photograph of Tommy,” Grandpa told her. “She also gave me the names and numbers of his relatives and friends in the area.”

“How do you know he’s still in the area?”

“White chocolate.”

“What?”

“There was a bowl of white chocolate truffles at Tommy’s house, and I found a wrapper from one at those falls of yours. It was no more than a day old.”

Reaching inside his jacket, Grandpa pulled out a Polaroid of a tire track, which he showed Rudi. “I also found fresh tracks from that Harley Sturgis of his. These Harleys, I must say, while they cannot compare to the Jawas I rode in my Prague days, it is a very nice bicycle.”

Rudi shook her head. “How is any of this going to help us find where Tommy is right now?”

“I told you it would take time.”

Loudly, Rudi sighed in frustration, and she sat back and crossed her arms.

“What’s wrong?” I asked.

She turned from us. “They know.”

“What are you talking about?”

“Everyone knows Tommy’s sick. They’re talking about him like he’s got the plague or something.”

“Is that why everyone was avoiding you? They think you have it too?”

“You did not tell me that he has a contagious disease,” Grandpa said to me with some fright.

“It’s not contagious,” Rudi insisted.

“If it’s not contagious,” I countered, “why was he in the isolation ward? And why is everyone so afraid if all he has is pneumonia? Is there something you’re not telling us?”

Rudi wouldn’t answer, and this just made me more worried.

“Are you sure you are not sick?” Grandpa asked Rudi.

She scowled as she kicked open her door. “They checked me out. I’m fine.”

“There was one more thing.”

Rudi stopped and turned to Grandpa, who added, “Mrs. Goodwin was also kind enough to check Tommy’s credit cards. He has not used them, but he has taken some cash with his ATM card.”

“So?”

“The amount he took and that he is not staying with any friends or family in the area lead me to believe that he is staying in a motel. A cheap one. You would not know which?”

“I only know one. But he’d never stay there.”

We drove to the motel in Newark anyway.

Though we got stuck in a sea of traffic on Route 22. Grandpa could see the anxiety in Rudi’s face as he looked at her through his rearview mirror. “While we are waiting,” he said, “I might as well tell you my Kafka story.”

I shook my head. “I really don’t think this is a good time, Grandpa.”

“I think the story will have meaning for your sister. Actually, I am certain of it.”

I kept trying to dissuade him, but I would’ve had an easier time making the traffic disappear.

#

It was just after New Year’s in 1923 when the 25-year-old man who’d become my grandfather stepped inside his apartment building on Eliška Krásnohorská Street in Josefov, the Jewish section of Prague. Like every Friday night, he was carrying a big bouquet of white roses in his arms.

In the building’s foyer, he saw a woman around thirty sitting on the stairway steps in her coat, and he noticed the distress on her face as she anxiously rose to her feet. “Hermann Weiss?”

“That’s me,” he answered as he warily stepped toward her.

“My name is Ottilie Davidová. My sister Elli lives in this building. She says you’re a policeman.”

“That’s right. What can I do for you?”

“Our brother Franz has been missing for days. Franz Kafka is his name.”

“Franz Kafka?” Hermann muttered, as the name sounded familiar. It took a few seconds to realize why it had sounded familiar, and he asked, “The writer?”

“You, you’ve heard of him?”

“I read one of his stories when I was in college a few years ago. What happened to him? I haven’t heard of him at all since. Does he still write?”

“Not very successfully, I’m afraid. He worked as an insurance clerk until tuberculous forced him into early retirement.”

“Did you file a missing persons report with the police?”

“Yes, but they’re not doing a thing to find him. They even told us this.”

“Well, I’m not sure what you expect from me. I’m just a beat cop and not even a good one at that. Twice already they’ve threatened to fire me, and the third time just may be the charm.”

“Elli told me that she once had coffee with you and your wife. She said you were smart and ambitious.”

“Even if that were true, what could I do? He could be anywhere in Europe by now.”

“Please. Franz may be a nobody to the world, but to us he is someone very special. We must find him.”

“When was the last time you saw him?”

“Tuesday evening. He’d been staying with me at my house on Golden Lane. Then the next morning he was gone, along with his suitcase and all his things.”

“Perhaps he went to a sanitarium.”

“He wouldn’t just go without telling us. He didn’t tell his girlfriend either. She’s just as worried as we are.”

Hermann wanted to refuse the woman’s request. The words even formed in his mouth. He knew it was an impossible task, and he was tired and just wanted to relax over the weekend. He especially wanted to spend time with his wife, who still hadn’t gotten over the stillborn child she delivered many months earlier.

But there was something in Ottilie’s eyes. A desperation he couldn’t ignore anymore than he could Rudi’s. So he sighed. “Do you have a picture of him?”

“Yes,” she answered, and she reached into her purse and pulled out a small photo, which she handed him. “It’s a little old. He’ll be forty this year.”

“I guess I could check the train stations.”

“Oh, thank you, Herr Weiss!”

“Just let me drop off these flowers, and I’ll have a look. But I don’t want you to get your hopes up.”

The first thing Hermann did was go to Wilson Station, the main train station in Prague. He showed the picture of Kafka to everyone he could find who worked there. But none of them recognized the man.

Next, he tried Masaryk Station, which was the smaller station in town, but he had the same lack of success. So he was ready to give up. He even convinced himself that he had done all he could do.

Then he remembered that there was an even smaller station in Dejvice, not far from where Kafka had been living. It was the same station President Masaryk used whenever he visited his summer home in Lány.

It was well after midnight by the time Hermann got to the aging building. From a distance, it looked dark and empty. But, as he reached its doors, he saw a dim light coming from inside and a handful of people waiting on the benches. The other thing he saw was a ticket clerk.

Hermann strode inside the building and up to the clerk, who was wearing a suit that looked a hundred years old. “Have you seen this man?” Hermann wanted to know while showing the clerk Kafka’s photo.

It didn’t look as if the man even glanced at the picture, but he nodded. “I’ve seen him. A few nights ago.”

“Where did he go?”

“Ústí nad Zapomněním.”

This confused Hermann. “I’ve lived in this country now for years, but I’ve never heard of any Ústí nad Zapomněním. I know Ústí nad Labem and Ústí nad Orlicí, but no . . .”

“Do you want a ticket or not?”

“How much?”

“One crown, ninety-nine hellers.”

“That’s a rather odd amount,” Hermann mumbled. But he reached into his pants pocket and pulled out two crown coins and placed them underneath the ticket window.

The clerk took them, and he wrote out a train ticket. This he placed underneath the window along with a one-heller coin, which he pointed at. “Don’t lose this. You’ll need it to pay the ferryman.”

“The ferryman?” Hermann gasped.

No further information was forthcoming. So Hermann took the ticket and the coin and sat on a bench across from a man who was reading the latest edition of a popular Czech newspaper called *Lidové Noviny*.

“Excuse me, sir,” Hermann said to the man, “I’m still learning Czech. Could you perhaps tell me what *zapomnění* means?”

“Oblivion,” the man told him.

“So ‘Ústí nad Zapomněním’ would mean ‘The Mouth at the . . .’”

“The Mouth at the River of Oblivion.”

Hermann was pretty certain that there was no such river anywhere in what was then Czechoslovakia. So again he wanted to give up. “Just go home,” he told himself over and over. But every time he did, he saw Ottilie’s eyes, and the image of them only got stronger. So he waited.

With nothing better to do, he glanced at the man’s newspaper and its headline:

JAROSLAV HAŠEK HOSPITALIZED IN GRAVE CONDITION

As best he could with the Czech he knew, Hermann read the first few paragraphs of the article, and he learned how the famed author of *Good Soldier Švejk* wasn’t expected to live much longer.

Hermann shook his head, as he loved the book, which many consider the first anti-war novel. He loved the book even though his wife had to help him read it. Like many veterans of the first world war, he saw his own life in its pages, and this somehow made him feel less alone. So he was still shaking his head when a train with a single passenger car sputtered into the station.

Like the train clerk’s suit, the train car Hermann stepped aboard looked a hundred years old. With his apprehension increasing, he took a seat on a wooden bench along with the other passengers and waited.

He waited so long that he was again ready to give up, just as a stout middle-aged conductor entered the front of the car. “I do hope everyone has their heller with them,” he called out. “The ferryman will not provide passage without proper fare.”

Slowly, the man started through the car while punching the tickets of those he passed, and he came up to Hermann.

Hermann gave him his ticket, and he showed him Kafka’s picture. “Have you seen this man?”

“He was on the train the other night.”

“The train to Ústí nad Zapomněním?

“Where else?”

“So there really is such a place?”

“There really is.”

“When will we get there?”

“You have a long journey ahead of you, young man. Just sit back and get some rest. I’ll be sure to let you know when we get there.”

Hermann tried to do this. He took his punched ticket from the man and leaned back and closed his eyes, and he felt the train sputter out of the station. It moved so slow that someone could’ve overtaken it on foot. “It’ll take us days just to get out of Prague,” he said to himself.

*The Mouth at the River of Oblivion*.

These words popped back into Hermann’s head. Why they did he didn’t know, but they kept popping into it until he realized that he actually *had* heard of such a river. But where?

*The ferryman will not provide passage without proper fare*.

“Charon,” Hermann softly cried out as he opened his eyes and recalled how, in Greek mythology, Charon ferried the dead across the River of Oblivion to the underworld, but only after they paid him a coin. “It’s ridiculous,” he shrieked with his head shaking. “This must be some kind of joke.”

Hermann started looking for the conductor, and he noticed they were somehow moving even slower than before.

“Ústí nad Zapomněním,” the conductor bellowed as he marched inside the car. “Last stop. Ústí nad Zapomněním.”

“But we just left Prague!” Hermann yelled.

“You are mistaken, sir. We’ve been traveling all night. Look out your window if you don’t believe me.”

Hermann did, and he saw that it was morning outside and that it was covered in fog.

Hermann stumbled off the train, and he hesitantly followed the other passengers as they made their way up a hill. Toward what, he couldn’t see. All he could was the tepid river to the left of him, whose flow was barely a trickle, and the small cliff he was walking alongside that overlooked it.

He continued up the hill, and he saw something else. A stairway leading down the cliff to a dock where stood a dozen people.

Hearing the sound of screeching wheels, Hermann turned toward it and an elderly woman in a dirty blue uniform, who was pushing an empty garbage bin up the hill with a big grimace on her face.

Showing her the picture of Kafka, he asked her if she had seen him.

“If he’s here,” she answered as she pointed up the hill, “he’s up there.”

Hermann looked at what she was pointing at. Through the fog, he could just make out a large gothic structure on top of the hill. “What is it?”

“A place of death it is. And plenty of it.”

Hermann came to a stop. He did with fear and while thinking about returning to the station and to Prague, as he had already seen too much death in his young life. This led him to turn around and start back, only to come to another stop when he saw a boatman in a hooded cloak rowing a skiff down the river toward the dock.

“Charon,” he muttered with his fear increasing. Unsteadily, he took a step closer toward the edge of the cliff to get a better look at the man, and then another. Then he slipped. He slipped and tumbled down the hill, all the way to the bottom.

Hermann woke on a stretcher, in a dark and dank hospital corridor, and he saw that he was wearing nothing but a night shirt.

Rising to his waist, he felt faint. He felt as if he would collapse, and he reached for his head and found it bandaged. He was sore all over, but he pushed himself off the stretcher and onto the floor.

Steadying himself, he started to move. He stammered down a long and winding hallway and reached an open door.

He looked inside, and he saw that it was packed with men lying on beds. There were more than a hundred of them in an immense room that stretched farther than what he could see.

“Franz Kafka?” he yelped.

There was no reply. No one even acknowledged the question.

He continued down the corridor, passing rooms packed with either men or women. Into each of the former, he called out Kafka’s name. But in none did he get a response. It didn’t seem as if anyone was breathing.

The first exception to this was in a room by a stairway, where Hermann saw a group of five men surrounding the bed of an obese man. This man was around forty with wild curly brown hair and was wearing a filthy night shirt, and he was the center of attention because he was reading aloud from a notebook. “Lieutenant Dub, who thought the terrible liquor was going to his head, tapped his finger on the table and lucidly explained to Captain Ságner: ‘The district commissioner and I have always said, “Patriotism, loyalty to duty, self-achievement, these are the true weapons in war.” I’m reminded of this especially today when our troops are on the cusp of crossing the border.’”

The obese man fell silent, and he lowered his notebook.

The men around him, who were looking on as if listening to the word of God, glanced at each other uncomfortably.

“Well?” one of them uttered.

“Well what?” the obese man growled.

“Aren’t you going to finish?”

“There is no more, gentlemen. Perhaps there will be no more.”

“But you can’t just end it without finishing the story,” said another man.

“I don’t know what I can tell you.”

“Do you think,” mumbled a third man, who was holding a leather-bound book, “do you think you could sign my copy?”

“What for?” howled the obese man. “What good will it do you now?”

The man responded by lowering his head and everything else, which caused the obese man to sigh. A sigh that was more like a groan. Along with it he snapped his fingers and reached out his hand. “Give it here.”

The man brightened up. Hurriedly, he handed his book and a pen to the obese man, who just as hurriedly signed and returned it.

“Thank you, Mr. Hašek,” the man cried out in joy while clutching the book as if it were a newborn. “Thank you so much!”

“Jarda,” Hašek told him. “My friends call me Jarda. All of you, call me Jarda.”

The men all smiled, and they started back to their beds, exposing an old wheelchair by Hašek’s bed.

Surprised by who was sitting only a handful of steps in front of him, Hermann took a step into the room and then another. He stepped all the way up to Hašek, who glared at him full of hate.

Turning from this, Hermann saw the endless men to his left and the darkness beyond it. “Franz Kafka?” he shouted. “Is there a Franz Kafka here?”

“I am Franz Kafka,” came a meek voice from the nothingness.

#

Grandpa broke from his story when we reached the decrepit motel on the edge of Newark and parked in front of its office. He got out of the car, and he went inside the building and spoke to the clerk while Rudi and I sat silently by ourselves.

Coming out with his head hanging, Grandpa opened his door and glanced at us as he pointed behind himself. “That *vůl* in there . . .”

“That what?” Rudi uttered, unable to control her exasperation.

“That *jerk*,” I translated.

“Thank you,” Grandpa said to me. “That *jerk* in there would not tell me anything. I could not even bribe him.”

“I told you Tommy wouldn’t come here,” Rudi snapped.

“But that does not mean that he will not. I will add this place to my daily checklist on that, that . . .”

Grandpa tried to come up with the right words, much like he had outside the hospital. But not even “*jak se řekne?”* would help him. So he turned to me. “What do you call that contraption in the living room?”

“A PC, Grandpa,” I told him with my own exasperation.

Grandpa and I again waited outside Columbia as it let out on a warm and sunny day. There were so many people hanging outside it that I couldn’t see the school doors.

Though these people quickly dispersed when Rudi marched through them. Unlike before, she wasn’t alone. She was holding the hands of two boys. One was huge with a receding hairline while the other was holding a book that looked like a Bible. The three looked defiant as they made their way toward us. So did the small boy who was walking behind them.

“You wanna tell me the story behind this?” I said to Rudi over the phone.

“No,” she answered.

But she did anyway.

Rudi sat at the back table of the cafeteria by herself, as she’d been doing since she returned to school and the rumors began swirling about her. Even the tables surrounding hers were empty.

Picking at her food, she suddenly heard silence roar through the hall. She looked up, and she saw Owen standing in front of her with his food.

He turned toward the silence, and he saw everyone staring at him in shock. “I got curious about that disease,” he told them, “the one you all believe she has. So I went to the library last night. I went there for the first time. And you know what? You people think I’m dumb, but you’re way dumber than me.”

The silence and shock continued, and Owen sat across from Rudi, who was just as shocked as the others and maybe more so. “While I was there,” he said to her, “I looked up that word . . . *karma*. This is the good kind, right?”

He smiled a little, and she smiled back while trying to stop herself from crying.

Noticing this, he reached out his big paw, and she grabbed his fingers.

Bashfully, Jared and Eliot sat next to them with their lunches. But she made it easy for them by pretending that nothing had happened. Though she couldn’t help notice Maria, who was sitting way in the distance next to Samantha and doing everything she could to avoid looking at her.

Grandpa didn’t have much to report that day, and he and I could both see the increasing doubt Rudi was feeling and the fatalism that was setting in. Perhaps that’s why he stayed out so late that evening. He still wasn’t home when I fell asleep.

When I came home from school the following day, I found him asleep on the living-room couch in front of the loudly-playing TV, and I knew right away that this wasn’t one of his good days.

I called out his name, but he wouldn’t wake. So I turned off the television with the remote and sat beside him, and I shook him a little until he started rising.

“Ana?” he groggily mumbled.

“No, Grandpa,” I told him softly. “Ana’s not here.”

“I have to buy her roses before she comes home,” he went on, unaware that decades had passed since he had seen her last. “White roses.”

“Let’s go get some.”

I stood and was about to help him up when I noticed something on the screen of the CRT monitor a few steps away. At first, I was upset, having often told Grandpa that the monitor could burn in if it were left on for long periods of time. But when I got a better look at it, I was surprised to see what was there. This led me to type a few commands from the keyboard, and I watched as the dot matrix printer next to the computer began to churn.

Rudi stepped into the back of the Olds with her head down. As she raised it, she saw me in the driver’s seat, with Grandpa asleep next to me while mumbling in Czech.

“What’s wrong with him?” she asked.

“I think he overdid it last night,” I answered.

“Are you sure he’s up to this?”

I wasn’t sure. But I didn’t say this. I didn’t say anything, knowing Grandpa needed this as much as Rudi. He needed to have a reason for moving forward, and I needed him to have it, because I needed him.

Grandpa started shaking in fright, and he banged into the door with both his arms. “*Drž se dál od vlaku!”* he screeched with tears in his eyes, recalling the last words he said to Ana, when he begged her to stay away from the train that was taking him to Theresienstadt. “*Prosím tě se drž*.”

“What’s he saying?” Rudi wanted to know.

“Remember when I said Mom had been through a lot?” I told her. “So has he.”

“That music he’s been listening to . . . the Pergolesi.”

“You know Pergolesi?”

She looked at me as if I had asked her the stupidest question ever and pointed at the car’s stereo. “Put it on.”

I did, and Rudi did something that surprised me even more than her knowledge of Baroque music. She leaned up front and took one of Grandpa’s hands with both of hers, and she caressed it. This was when I first saw the nurturing side of her. A side that may have seemed to contradict everything she was about but one that would be fundamental to everything she’d become.

It took a while, but Grandpa calmed, and he peacefully drifted off.

Rudi sat back in her seat, and I reached into my jacket for the printout I had made, which I showed her. “I found this when I came home today.”

“What is it?”

“He mapped out every lodging within thirty kilometers of here that’s in Tommy’s price range, and he was visiting them all too. He must’ve been up half the night yesterday.”

Carefully, Rudi looked at the printout. “Did you program all that for him?”

I grinned and nodded at Grandpa. “Don’t let that Luddite spiel of his fool you. He was programming the computer the first day we got it. I noticed this afternoon that he even wrote a serial communications library so that he could download data from CompuServe.”

The sun began setting behind the shelter, and Rudi told me that she had to go. But the story wouldn’t let go of me. So I returned to it later that night as I lay on my bed in the dark.

Every day, after checking on Grandpa when I came back from school, I drove to Columbia by myself. I would often find Rudi waiting for me outside on the front stoop with her friends. It seemed like they were always helping Owen with his homework.

On one blustery afternoon, a girl joined them. She had blonde hair and a ponytail and looked as far removed from them as they did from each other. She sat next to Jared and took his hand. They both smiled, but what I remember was the look on her face. She was in another place and a good one.

I honked my horn, and Rudi and I went to many places on Grandpa’s checklist by ourselves. This included the South Mountain Reservation, where I looked around in the lightly-falling snow while Rudi sat on some rocks facing the waterfall. She had her arms wrapped around herself and her eyes closed as she try to hum some old song I recognized but couldn’t name. It took her many tries before she got the tune right, and then she wouldn’t stop humming it. She hummed it with a big smile.

Only now can I imagine what she was thinking and how her arms were crossed not against the weather but in recollection of a time she wanted to know once more.

Like the previous afternoons we’d spent in the reservation, we found nothing. We found nothing anywhere we went. Despite being the grandson of a great detective and hearing his stories millions of times, I simply lacked the most important skill he had: the ability to see what was hidden in front of me.

Rudi and I headed back to the car, which was parked on Crest Drive, a long street that cut through the width of the forest. I reached my door, and I noticed something in the opposite direction from where we had been. I’m not even sure what I noticed, but I wandered toward it along with Rudi, and we found a set of motorcycle tracks that ran through a clearing. They looked like the ones from Grandpa’s Polaroid and headed straight for a tree before swerving away from it at the last moment.

“It’s like he was trying to . . .” I mumbled.

Rudi turned away, and she hurried back to the car. I followed her as she called out, “I need to go somewhere right now.”

The snow was falling harder. It was almost a sheet of white when the Olds stopped in the parking lot of the South Orange Recreational Center as the sun set.

“Why’d you want to come here?” I asked.

“This is where NA meets,” Rudi told me. “Attending is actually a condition of my probation. But this is the first time I’ve been here.”

We waited. As it neared six, some people began streaming into the building. They were all ablur.

Rudi continued to wait. She waited until well after six before going into the building. I went in with her, no stranger to meetings like these. On the second floor of the building, we approached an open door, where we could hear the echoes of many voices chanting a prayer I also was no stranger to:

*God, grant me the serenity to accept the things I cannot change,*

*The courage to change the things I can,*

*And the wisdom to know the difference.*

The voices came to an end, and the two of us stepped inside the room. In the threshold, we saw Jared, who was sitting in one of the ubiquitous folding metal chairs with his Bible on his lap. He was sitting way in the back, far from everyone else.

Rudi whispered his name, and he turned to her and feigned surprise, and she didn’t exactly seemed shocked to see him there either.

We sat next to him as an aging man upfront rose from behind a table covered in keychains of different colors. “For those who are new here tonight, my name is Frank. Does anyone have anything they want to share?”

No one responded.

“Anyone?”

Hesitantly, Jared raised his hand, which surprised the man. But he smiled at him and waved him toward the front of the room.

Slowly and nervously, Jared approached, clutching his Bible. In the front of the room, with his thick accent he told everyone: “My name is Jared, and I’m an addict.”

“Hello, Jared,” most of us replied. Rudi was the loudest.

“I’ve been clean for a while. According to the calendar, more than sixteen months. Now, that may seem like a long time to some of you, but to me it was yesterday. It was yesterday I woke in a house I didn’t know, with people I had never met, in a town I had never been. Even today, even at this moment, I know I’m no more than a day from returning there. I know this when I’m at school, I know it when I’m at home with my mom, I know it every time I sit and pray.”

Lowering his head, Jared lifted his Bible. “Don’t let this fool you. I’m worse than all of you. I can’t even wear short-sleeved shirts in the summer because my arms are so messed-up. My legs too. I’ve lied and stolen and done unspeakable things to myself. I’ve hurt people. I mean, really hurt people. I even hit my own mother. Nothing I’ll ever do will make up for that. No Bible verses, no good deeds, nothing.”

With his hand shaking a bit, Jared lowered his Bible. But he didn’t raise his head. “The only difference between now and sixteen months ago is that I’m not alone. Not only has my mom been great, even though she has every reason not to be, but I have friends. Real friends. Friends who care about me. And it’s for this I pray. I pray for it all the time. I pray not just that I’m not alone but that I know I’m not alone.”

As slowly as Jared had walked to the front of the room, he made his way to the back of it, where Rudi rose from her seat and hugged him. She clutched him as hard as he was clutching that Bible, and he couldn’t stop crying, even after they sat down and another man began to share.

A few others shared after him, and Frank afterward called out, “Anyone else?”

No one spoke up, though Jared quietly tried to encourage Rudi by putting his hand on top of hers.

She didn’t react, and Frank started to move on to other business. But Rudi stood, and she walked to the front of the room and turned to everyone. “My name is Rudi, and I don’t even know how long I’ve been clean. A couple of weeks, I think.”

“Hello, Rudi,” everyone called out, trying to make her feel comfortable. I shouted it.

“I forgot to say that I’m an addict,” she went on, specifically to Frank.

“It’s all right,” he murmured to her.

“I probably didn’t because, because I like to pretend I’m not. I like to pretend that I’m strong and that I’m in control and that I’ve licked my problems. But I’m an addict, and I’ll always be an addict, and I’m not strong and I’m not in control and I’m just about to fall apart.”

Frank took her hand, but it still took a while before she could steady herself. She closed and opened her eyes multiple times before she continued. “I must’ve been to hundreds of these things over the years. I’ve never shared anything. I’ve even mocked the whole idea. But I’m not the same person I was. For the first time, I’ve let someone close to me.

“I’ve always been alone, even when I was messed up. Even then I wouldn’t let anyone near me. But I’ve met someone. Someone who makes me so mad because he makes me want to believe that I mean something and matter, that everything means something and matters and that there’s actually a reason to be alive. I don’t even know if he’s alive right now, and I don’t know if I can make it if he’s not.”

I got home and saw Grandma putting a blanket over Grandpa as he lay on the living-room couch in a daze.

“Where have you been?” she asked me.

“I,” I mumbled as I came to a stop not far from them, “I was at one of my meetings.”

“I did not think you went to them anymore.”

“But I should.”

Grandma started feeding Grandpa. She fed him some of her famous chicken soup and matzo balls from a tray on the coffee table. Or at least she tried to do this.

“*Srnčí na pepři si dám*,” Grandpa growled while shaking his head and keeping his mouth from the spoon. “*S kroketama*.”

“You know very well, old man,” she growled back, “that there is no venison in this house, peppered or otherwise. Nor are there potato croquettes. You will have to suffice with my soup.”

It looked like neither would relent. But finally he let her feed him, with her wiping his chin after each spoonful with her handkerchief.

“I love this man,” she murmured with a smile, I’m sure as much to him as to me. “He is not my *bashert*, nor am I his. But I love him. He . . . he is *moje všechno*.”

*Her* *all*.

Grandpa got close enough to his old self to continue looking for Tommy. But I could tell he wasn’t too hopeful as we sat in his car and waited outside Columbia in our usual spot on Parker Avenue.

The school let out, but there was no Rudi, even after all the stragglers had left. Though I heard a pair of them snickering about her and Tommy, and I got worried. So I opened my door, just as she walked out of the school holding the hand of another of her friends.

It was Maria. The two of them looked as if they had just been through hell together. Both their faces showed streaks of tears.

Rudi noticed us, and she and Maria hugged and said goodbye before Rudi rushed toward us, with Maria watching her the entire way and looking as if she were about to cry again. “I’ll call you tonight!”

Thinking back to this from my bunk in the men’s dorm, it struck me that I never learned what had happened between Rudi and Maria and how they had made up, and I had to know. I had to know right then. So I climbed down my bunk with my phone and rushed into the courtyard without my coat (or my pants), and I called Rudi.

“What’s wrong?” she groggily mumbled as she tried to wake up.

“I need to ask you something,” I told her, and I told her what.

“Can’t it wait till tomorrow?”

“I’ll never get to sleep if I don’t find out.”

We compromised, and she gave me the quick version. “It had been me who let out how sick Tommy was and with what.”

“Maria. You told her.”

“She wanted to know if the rumors about Tommy and me having some terrible disease were true. So I told her. I told her everything. I thought she’d understand, but she was frightened.”

“Of getting sick?”

“And how she’d explain it to her dad. She went crazy. The whole world was going crazy. If you remember, people even thought you could get it from a toilet seat. Even Maria thought this. She got hysterical because I had used her bathroom. That’s why I lied to you about Tommy’s sickness. I thought you’d go crazy too.”

“Maybe I would have.”

“Maria told Samantha what Tommy had, and it blew up from there.”

“You weren’t mad at Maria?”

“Are you kidding? I wanted to kill her. But . . .”

“But what?”

“That day you saw us hugging outside the school, a lot had happened earlier. A big scene at lunch that shook everyone. I was still trying to process it all as I was leaving school. That’s when I saw Maria waiting for me in the corridor by the front doors. Again, she was frightened, but for a different reason.

“I wanted to ignore her. I didn’t even want to recognize she was there. But then I noticed Samantha by the exits. She looked even madder than me. She glared at Maria and slammed open one of the doors. Maria spun toward her, but she wouldn’t go with her, and Samantha rushed out while screaming, ‘It’s over!’

“Still, Maria wouldn’t go. She turned back to me and muttered, ‘I’m sorry.’

“Ignoring this, I started to walk off. But I stopped. I don’t know why. Maybe because I realized she’d given up a lot to make things right. Whatever the reason, I just stood there, not sure what to do. ‘You were the best friend I ever had,’ she whispered to me, and I couldn’t help turn toward her and open my arms. ‘I still am,’ I whispered back.”

I said goodnight to Rudi and hung up, and I went back to bed. But even then the story wouldn’t let go of me. It kept unraveling before me.

Rudi reached the Olds, and she glanced into it, and she was surprised to see Grandpa. She gazed at him as she jumped inside the back door with lots of excitement. “He was here.”

Grandpa and I both spun toward her, and I uttered, “What?”

“Tommy came to the cafeteria at lunch. He was really messed up.”

Grandpa looked confused. “Messed up?”

“He looked drunk, and his head was shaved.”

“Then what happened?” I asked.

“He was standing there in the front of the room. No one even noticed him at first. When they did, everyone started fleeing, even his so-called friends.”

“Just because he has pneumonia?” questioned Grandpa.

“He’s dying,” I said. “Isn’t he?”

Rudi didn’t answer.

“Is this, is this the disease I’ve reading about?” Grandpa mumbled. “The one that has been afflicting homosexuals?”

“Obviously, it’s afflicting more than just them,” Rudi growled, probably thinking that someone like Grandpa must’ve been homophobic when he was anything but. But that didn’t mean he wasn’t upset.

“You must stay away from this boy,” he shrieked while shaking both his head and finger.

“The hell I will,” she hollered.

“This is a deadly disease, Rudi. They do not know what is causing it or how it spreads. They know nothing but that it kills.”

“It’s not contagious.”

“How can you know?”

“Because the whole world would have it by now!”

“Maybe they do.”

“Then what difference does it make!”

“You are not to go near him.”

“But—”

“—I will still find him. I promise you that. It does not matter if I get sick.”

“You’re not gonna get sick!”

“Stay away from him!”

“I won’t!”

“Stay away or I will!”

“Do what you want!”

Rudi kicked open the door, and she started to leave.

Grandpa got frightened. Perhaps he thought he’d lose his granddaughter like he had his daughter. “Please, please do not go.”

Rudi stopped, and she returned to her seat and closed her door.

“What happened after everyone was fleeing from Tommy?” Grandpa asked her.

“He went nuts. He started screaming and tossing tables over. Then he saw me heading toward him and ran. I ran after him and followed him outside. But he went off on his bike before I could get to him.”

“Did he give you any notion of where he might be going?”

“No, but there was something else. He had a Walkman on and was screaming this Black Flag song.”

“Is there some significance to that?”

“He doesn’t listen to that type of music. I wouldn’t’ve thought he even knew who they were.”

“Maybe he heard them on the radio.”

“They don’t play that type of music on the radio, Grandpa,” I interjected.

“So it is possible that he bought one of their recordings recently,” Grandpa said. “But lots of stores around here must sell recordings.”

“Not these.”

Grandpa turned to Rudi. “Where around here could he have bought these?”

“I don’t know,” she cried out. “It’s not like I’ve been buying records.”

“We could go to a library and find a phonebook,” I suggested, “and call every store.”

“That would take all day,” groaned Rudi.

“Do you have a better idea?”

Rudi sighed. “There’s a library in the school.”

Quickly, she swung open her door and started out of the car. But she stopped when she saw Owen walking through the parking lot toward the bus stop on Valley Road.

Cupping her hands around her mouth, she called out his name. She called it out a number of times, each one louder. But he was too far away to hear her as he joined a bunch of people at the stop, who were waiting for the bus that was just crossing Parker.

“Stop that bus!” Rudi screamed while pointing at it, and Grandpa sped off, not even waiting for Rudi to close her door. She only could after we made a screeching right onto the intersection. This was when Grandpa, as he would sometimes do when he wasn’t thinking, followed his instincts and turned onto the left lane, putting us in the path of a large pickup, which frantically honked its horn.

“*Do práva, Dědo!”* I screamed at Grandpa while flailing my arms to the right. “*Do práva!”*

“I know,” he calmly replied. “I know.” Just as calmly, he swerved out of the way of the pickup and in front of the bus as it was starting to leave, and now the bus was honking its horn at us, doing so much like the pickup had.

“Where did you learn how to drive?” Rudi gasped.

“Uzhhorod,” Grandpa matter-of-factly answered. “If only the Habsburgs had won the first world war, everyone would be driving on the proper side of the road.”

The bus kept honking its horn, only more frantically. So Grandpa spun toward Rudi and pointed out the car. “The bus.”

Rudi didn’t move. She didn’t because she was staring at Grandpa’s forearm and the number tattooed on it. She stared at it in horror.

“Rudi?” I murmured.

This got her out of her daze, enough that she could get out of the car, and we watched her hurry toward the bus.

I continued watching her as I fell asleep in the men’s dorm. I watched her disappear.

the sixth night

Mondays I always had more work than normal, as no one took my place at the motel on my days off, and Amoun expected me to get it done in the same four hours. I was running around even more than usual.

With about a half hour to go, I had caught up, which meant I again had to clean the large field in back of the motel. As I labored in the cold but bright midday sun, my mind kept wandering back to Josh and what I should do with what I had learned about him. Why I was thinking about this when I knew there was nothing I could do I couldn’t say.

Finally, I forced my mind to think of something else, and it somehow came upon an old Czech film called *Larks on a String*, which I’ve seen so many times that I know every line of it. Set during the early years of Communism, it’s about a group of misfits who’d run afoul of the authorities for one reason or another. They force them to work in a scrap steel plant that served as a metaphor: it would smelt them into the kind of new men the regime wanted or else, with the “else” meaning slaving in the uranium mines and the unnatural death that would almost certainly come from it. Because of this, the men were much like birds perching on a string. Any breeze could blow them over.

One of these men had been the head of the Prague Library, who got sent there because he refused to destroy the works of Schopenhauer. Despite this (or maybe because of it), he was always quoting Kant during the movie, and one of these quotes popped into my head and wouldn’t leave: “Two things fill the mind with ever new and increasing admiration and awe, the more often and steadily I reflect upon them: the starry heavens above me and the moral code inside me.”

“Why am I thinking of this?” I asked myself aloud while gripping a discarded diaper that I’d pulled from some weeds.

It took a few moments to realize that it was this “moral code” that was keeping my mind on Josh in spite of all reason. This only got stronger when I saw Alaya step outside the motel with her cleaning cart for a cigarette break. The woman with the beautiful name and a voice just like Paul McCartney. She not only gave me one of her accentuated waves but smiled. She smiled as if she knew exactly what I was thinking and was trying to encourage me to see it through.

Ignoring this or trying to, I returned to the story of searching for Tommy.

Owen knew just two places where you could buy Black Flag records. One was a flea market in a city called Union that was only open on weekends. The other was a store not far from Columbia called Vintage Vinyl.

We went to the latter, driving to Springfield Avenue in Irvington, where we parked across the street from a tiny shop that you’d never notice unless you were looking for it. Even when we were looking for it, we passed it twice before we spotted it.

Grandpa, Rudi, and I stepped out of the car, and we hurried across the busy road and into the store. We found it empty apart from a short, muscular man in his twenties. He was standing behind the counter wearing a ripped T-shirt that was about three sizes too small and was screaming along with the Circle Jerks’ “Back Against the Wall,” which was blaring from a record player a few steps from him.

Not quite knowing what to think of this or the man, Grandpa stood by the door and stared at him with equal measures of confusion and wonder as Rudi and I looked around the store. The first thing I noticed about it was that, even though it was smaller than some Cadillacs, every record was great. It was the perfect selection of music from the sixties onward, with apparent disregard as to whether any of it would sell. It was more of a record collection than a store. Among the treasures I saw was an original copy of *The Velvet Underground & Nico* with the banana sticker intact. They also had a bootleg of an alternative version of John Coltrane’s *A Love Supreme* and a section dedicated to the bands that had performed in *The Decline of Western Civilization*. This included the record that was now playing.

The other thing I noticed about the place was the copies of *Trouser Press* on the counter. This was a cult magazine about the independent music scene that I had heard about but had always thought was a legend, as I had never seen it anywhere.

The man behind the counter got tired of Grandpa staring at him. He stopped his screaming and scratched the needle across the record, and he spun toward Grandpa. “Listen, pops, we have old records. But not that old.”

Grandpa grinned. Pulling out the picture of Tommy, he showed it to the man and said that we were looking for him.

“And you are?” the man growled.

“Tommy and I are . . .” Rudi mumbled.

The man glanced at Rudi incredulously. “You and Tommy?”

“It’s complicated.”

“I bet,” the man uttered with a roll of his eyes.

“Please . . .”

“The name’s Butch.”

“Please, Butch. Tommy’s sick. He’s sick and alone and . . . and I love him.”

Butch’s expression softened. It softened just a bit. “Look, he comes in here now and then and buys old Yardbirds records.”

“Has he been here recently?” Grandpa asked.

“A few days ago.”

“And he bought a Yardbirds record?” was my question.

“Actually, no. It was kind of weird. First, he was looking weird and maybe even a little hammered, and then he pulled out a copy of *Damaged* from the stacks.”

“By Black Flag?” Grandpa wondered.

Slowly, Butch turned toward him, and he raised his eyebrows as he deadpanned, “Your knowledge of punk rock is impeccable.”

Again, Grandpa grinned.

Spinning back to me, Butch added, “Tommy wanted to know if it was any good. So I told him. I told him it was the best. I also told him that it was no Yardbirds. I told him that he’d almost certainly not like it. But that’s what he wanted, and that’s what he bought. He even had me make him a tape of it.”

“Is there something special about this *Damaged?”* Grandpa asked me.

I asked Butch if he had another copy, and he nodded toward a stack of records to the right of us. I found it and showed Grandpa the cover, which had an image of Henry Rollins with his head shaved and his bloody fist through a mirror.

This shocked Grandpa. “We better find this boy quickly.”

“It’s not as bad as you think,” I insisted. “I’ve listened to this record a lot. There were times I’d listen to it all afternoon when I came home from school, and I always felt better because of it. While it’s full of anger and rage and self-hatred, a lot of the songs have this . . . I don’t even know what you’d call it . . . a mad desperation.”

“For what?”

“Hope,” spoke Rudi.

I turned to her in surprise. I had always thought what I experienced when listening to the record had been unique to me. But I saw now that she and probably many others felt the same thing when they listened to it. If Tommy did, we also had reason to hope.

“I guess you do not know where Tommy is staying?” Grandpa asked Butch.

“Why would I?” he snapped.

Grandpa had no more questions, so he put the record on top of the stack, and the three of us started out.

With some exasperation, Butch pointed down the street. “He was heading that way.”

“Toward Newark?” Grandpa wondered.

We parked in the lot of the same decrepit motel in Newark we had been at before, and we saw that Tommy’s bike wasn’t there.

“I told you he wouldn’t be here,” Rudi snarled with her frustration beginning to overwhelm her.

“But that does not mean that he was not here,” Grandpa told her before he opened his door and walked into the lot.

“Now what is he doing?” Rudi demanded.

I didn’t know. So I didn’t answer, and the two of us stared at Grandpa as he strolled through the lot. He did this for a long time, and it wasn’t obvious that he was looking for something. This made me wonder if he was having another of his stupors, and I wondered what we’d do if he was.

Suddenly, something grabbed his attention, and he kneeled on the ground in a parking space and pulled out the Polaroid of Tommy’s tire tracks from his jacket.

Quickly, Rudi and I jumped out of the car, and we rushed up to him, and he showed us a tire track frozen in the dirty snow. “He was here and not so long ago. Because I did not see this the last time I came here.”

“But he could be anywhere,” Rudi groaned.

Grandpa rose to his feet, and he continued looking. I looked with him. I did while trying to imagine what I’d be doing if I were Tommy, the boy who seemed so different from me when I first met him but who I knew now was no different at all. This led me to close my eyes and think. I especially thought about the album he’d been listening to. I went through every track in my head, trying to think of the one that could’ve stopped him from hitting that tree. One, in particular, came to mind, and I opened my eyes and turned to Rudi. “What song was Tommy singing in the cafeteria?”

“What does it matter?” she grumbled.

“I’m not sure.”

“I don’t know the name of it. It’s the one where the guy screams, ‘Keep me alive.’”

“‘Room 13.’”

“What was that?” Grandpa called out.

“Just a second,” I said to him as I glanced at the door numbers of the rooms around us. “The name of the song he was singing is called ‘Room 13.’ The room numbers here, they only go to ten.”

“But a larger hotel . . .”

Hurriedly, the three of us rushed back to the car.

We drove to lots of hotels and motels, without getting anywhere. As we came to a red light, Grandpa looked into his rearview mirror and glanced at Rudi. Seeing how distraught she looked, he decided this was a good time to continue his Kafka story.

#

Hermann approached a bed where lay a tall and frail man. He was so tall that his feet hung over the mattress.

“You’re Franz Kafka?” Hermann said as he reached him.

Kafka nodded, along with a string of coughs, and Hermann sat on the empty bed next to his. “It’s an honor to meet you, sir. I really enjoyed that book of yours. *The Metamorphosis*, wasn’t it?”

Kafka looked surprised. “How did you know I was here?”

“Your family sent me to find you.”

“There you are!” cried out a booming female voice. With it came a large nurse with short black hair and big black eyes. “I’ve been looking all over for you, Herr Weiss. I’ll go get your stretcher, so I can bring you to your bed.”

“What’s wrong with this one?” Hermann wondered while he pointed at it.

“I guess it would be all right.”

“Am I all right?”

“You’re very lucky that Mrs. Veselá saw you fall down that cliff. You can be certain that that good-for-nothing ferryman wouldn’t’ve helped you, even if you had your heller with you.”

“I must’ve lost mine in the fall.”

“Don’t you worry. You shall not be needing it, not for a long time. The doctor says that you just need some bed rest for a few days and then you can go home. Perhaps you can bring Herr Kafka with you. He belongs here as much as you.”

“I’m a little confused, nurse. You’re not implying that that ferryman outside is really Charon?”

“I could care less what his name is. He’s a *vůl*, I tell you. A *velikánský vůl!* What right did he have to take my mother before her time? I was just a little girl. I needed her.”

Overwrought with emotion, the nurse scampered off.

“I’m in a madhouse,” Hermann mumbled to himself, “and the inmates are running it.”

“That’s what I thought,” Kafka told him. “But now . . .”

“Don’t tell me that you believe that boatman is Charon.”

“Is it any crazier than airplanes or radios? When I was a boy, I would’ve thought those things were as fantastical as Charon. But now . . .”

Like before, the two were interrupted. They were interrupted by the loud screeching of wheels. Both men turned toward it, and they saw an angry-looking Hašek approaching them in his wheelchair. He came to a stop in front of their beds and scowled. “Just what we need here: more Jews. Can a Czech go anywhere these days to escape you? Perhaps not even in death!”

“What did I tell you, Mr. Hašek?” hollered the nurse as she returned with Hermann’s chart, which she placed on the railing of his bed. “Keep your petty prejudices to yourself. You’ll soon discover just how meaningless they are. Very soon!”

The nurse marched off, with Hašek sneering at her until she left the room. Then he turned back to the men and glared.

“This is the famous Jaroslav Hašek,” Kafka said to Hermann. “Or should I say, *infamous*.”

“I gathered as much,” Hermann told Kafka before he turned to Hašek and frowned. “I can assure you, sir, that many Czechs and Jews have already shared death together. I’ve seen it.”

“Are you trying to tell me that you served in the army, little man?”

“And I have an Order of the Iron Crown to show for it. Which I’d gladly chuck into that river over there to get any of my friends back. I wouldn’t care if they were Czech, German, or Jew. The bullets didn’t care.”

Ignoring this, Hašek turned his scowl onto Kafka. “Did he call you ‘Franz Kafka’?”

“I did,” Hermann let him know.

“Franz Kafka, the writer?”

“You’ve heard of me too?” Kafka gasped.

“I’ve read some of your stories, if you can call them such. ‘Absurd nonsense’ is a better name for them . . . men turning into bugs and ridiculous penal colonies.”

“You are one to judge, Mr. Hašek. The author of dreck. The ramblings of a drunkard. A common street urchin can write more coherently than you. Hell, my Czech is terrible, but even I can write it better than you.”

“You filthy . . .”

Hašek stumbled out of his wheelchair, and he stumbled toward Kafka and wildly swung his fist at him. It missed Kafka, and it missed him by a lot, while knocking his end table onto the floor along with the bell that was sitting on top of it.

This didn’t deter Hašek, who rolled up the sleeves of his night shirt as he gasped for breath. “It’s time for a little pogrom.”

“I should warn you,” Kafka told him without fear, “my father was a very good boxer in his day, and he taught me well. Even in my pathetic state, I can put you on the floor. Especially in your pathetic state.”

“Boxer? Your father . . . your father isn’t Hermannek, is he?”

“He is.”

“He’s got a little shop on Staromák?”

“That’s right.”

Hašek started to smile. He smiled in spite of himself as he stumbled back his wheelchair and sat down. “Why, that man is more Czech than me.”

Kafka said nothing, and Hašek added, “He’s the only person in Prague who can drink me under the table. He’s done it to me twice, and that’s just the times I remember.”

Again, Kafka said nothing. But he couldn’t help grin.

“How come I’ve never seen you out with him?” Hašek wondered.

“I’m afraid we are quite different men.”

“Yeah, I bet you’re a big disappointment to him.”

Kafka cringed a little, but once more he didn’t say a thing.

“You, a snooty member of the literati,” Hašek went on, “too high and mighty to hobnob with us common folk.”

“Listen to you talk, like you’re some kind of proletariat. You must be the richest writer in the country, especially as you have no publishers or agents to pay. Not even Čapek can earn what you do. Why, what you make off *Švejk* in a single day surely exceeds my writing earnings for a lifetime.”

“What’s wrong?” the nurse called out from the doorway. “I heard a bell.”

“I’m sorry, nurse,” Kafka told her. “I knocked the table over by accident.”

Skeptically, the woman came over to him. While glaring at Hašek, she picked up the table and put the bell back on top of it. “Don’t let this ruffian bully you, Herr Kafka.”

“Have no fear of that, Nurse Černá,” Hašek bellowed to the woman with a big grin. “He’s the son of one Hermann Kafka of Old Town Square, Prague. A man who once stared down a whole street of rioters. And I should know. I was one of them!”

The nurse snarled at Hašek, and she hurried off. As she left the room, Hašek glared one last time at both Hermann and Kafka and hurried off as well.

Hermann tried in vain to convince Kafka to go home with him.

“I’m a dead man,” Kafka insisted between a fit of coughs. “Whether I die tomorrow or six months from now makes no difference.”

“It makes a difference to your sisters,” Hermann insisted back. “And to your girlfriend.”

“I’m a burden to all of them.”

“It didn’t sound like it.”

“They’ll be better off when I’m gone, especially Ottla. She’s in a bad marriage with a horrible man. She’s only staying with him so I’ll have a place to stay. She’d leave him otherwise.”

“Can you be sure of that? Your death could make her life worse. You can’t know. None of us can be sure of anything. Perhaps that’s the whole point of living: to find out what happens next. Don’t you want to know what happens next?”

“Not anymore.”

“There must be something worth living for.”

“I can’t think of a thing.”

“But if I can, will you come home with me?”

Kafka began to answer, but he was interrupted by the nurse, who called out from the door, “You have a visitor, Herr Kafka.”

Both men turned forward, and they saw a smiling and well-dressed man around Kafka’s age approaching them. He stopped in front of Kafka’s bed, and Kafka said, “Thank you, Max. Thank you for coming.”

“Max?” Hermann uttered in surprise. “Are you Max Brod? The author of *Nornepygge Castle?”*

“You’ve heard of me?” Brod muttered with his own surprise.

“He’s even heard of me,” Kafka interjected with a grin.

Wanting to give the men some privacy, Hermann rose from his bed. “I think I’ll have a little walk.”

Hermann didn’t go far. Still wobbly from his fall, he saw a comfortable-looking chair by the doorway and sat on it. As he watched the two men converse in the distance, he felt himself getting drowsy, and he drifted off.

Hermann woke. He woke abruptly. He didn’t even know why he had. Then he saw Hašek and Brod yelling at each other by Kafka’s bed.

“You goddamn Jew!” Hašek screamed at the man while flailing his arms. “You’ve always been a goddamn Jew!”

Hurriedly, Hašek wheeled his chair toward the door. He wheeled it as fast as he could, which wasn’t very. He only slowed when he noticed Hermann, and he glared at him as he stopped in front of him.

“Don’t you worry about them,” came a gravely voice to Hašek’s right.

Hašek turned toward it, and he saw a smiling and unshaven man lying in a bed nearby.

“They’ll get theirs soon enough,” the man went on while nodding toward Kafka and Brod.

“What do you mean?” Hašek grumbled.

The man glanced around. He looked every which way and lifted the lapel of his night shirt, exposing a swastika pin.

This horrified Hašek. “You, you stay away from me.”

“What are you getting so upset about, Jarda?” the man replied.

“My name is Jaroslav. But don’t you even call me ‘Mister Hašek.’”

“I’m just like you, and you know it.”

“I’m not like you. I’m nothing like you at all!”

Angrily, Hašek pushed himself through the door, leaving the man to stare at Hermann. This turned into laughter. He laughed and laughed and wouldn’t stop.

Kafka and Brod continued talking by Kafka’s bed, watched by Hermann from the door.

Suddenly, the two men became agitated, and they started arguing. Not only did Hermann see this but so did Hašek, who had just returned to the room and stopped not far from Hermann.

Brod rushed off. He rushed toward the door.

“You must do what I say!” Kafka shouted. “You must burn them all!”

Brod didn’t respond, and he reached the door.

“Burn what?” demanded Hašek.

Brod wouldn’t answer as he pushed his way through the door.

Hermann noticed how conflicted Hašek looked. He looked as if he weren’t sure what to do before he followed Brod out the door.

#

Grandpa broke from his story as the sun set. He suggested we check the waterfall before it got too dark.

This took us down a long country road that passed through the length of the reservation and all the trees there. While staring into them, Rudi began humming the same old song she’d been humming by the waterfall. Though she stopped when we came upon a body of water.

“Reservoir,” she mumbled.

“What about it?” Grandpa replied as I turned to her.

“Tommy once told me that his father grew up in Newark, by the old reservoir there.”

“There is no reservoir in Newark.”

“But there must’ve been.”

We were so close to the waterfall that we decided to check it anyway. But Tommy wasn’t there, nor was there any sign of him. So we returned to Newark and began looking for a reservoir we knew didn’t exist. This was confirmed when we got to the main branch of the Newark Public Library as it closed, by a woman who was locking its front doors and who told us that she knew nothing of any old one either. It was confirmed by everyone we asked in the streets.

During his long career as a detective, my grandfather had been on many quixotic quests, but even the great knight-errant himself would’ve given up on this one. It was obvious Grandpa wanted to give up, and he probably only didn’t because there were no other clues, and he knew we needed to find Tommy right away. So he kept pulling over the car and asking random people in the street. This included a middle-aged woman who was pushing a shopping cart full of groceries down a dark and empty block.

“I don’t know of any reservoir in Newark,” she told us, causing Grandpa to sigh. “But I remember Reservoir Pizza. My little brother cried when they left town.”

This sent Rudi leaning toward the woman. “Do you remember where it was?”

“I sure do. On the corner of 14th Avenue and 9th Street.”

The Olds turned right onto 14th Avenue, where we saw no sign that a reservoir had once been there. Nor did we see any motel or hotel or anything like it. But Grandpa kept looking. He drove through every street in the neighborhood, and we finally came upon something: a cheap apartment complex that offered furnished rooms by the week.

“I did not think of apartments,” Grandpa mumbled to himself as he spun onto the parking lot, where a set of ramshackle units faced each other. In front of number 13 we saw the remains of Tommy’s bike.

Grandpa parked beside it. Before the car even came to a stop, Rudi ran out and banged on the door with her fists while calling out Tommy’s name.

There was no response, and the door was locked.

“Now what?” I asked Grandpa as we hurried toward her.

He didn’t answer. Glancing around, and not seeing anyone, he pulled out a set of picks from his jacket pocket and told us to cover him.

“What?” Rudi muttered.

“*Honem!”* he quietly howled.

*Quickly* was just how Rudi and I crouched around and over him. We shielded him from view, and he picked the lock and opened the door.

Rushing inside, we saw Tommy in front of us, lying on a creaky Murphy bed in the cramped studio. As Rudi had described, his head was shaved and he was drunk. He was barely conscious as he swayed to the music on his Walkman, which was cranked so loudly that I could tell he was listening to “Room 13.”

Rudi fell upon him on the bed. But he didn’t react, even when she shook him and started screaming. He just kept swaying.

Inching up to him, I noticed how he was sweating. Never had I seen anything like it. His bedsheets and pillow were soaked.

I turned from this, and I watched Grandpa pick up an empty vodka bottle on the floor. Glancing at it, he tossed it into a garbage pail and checked Tommy’s pulse, and I could see the worry on his face.

He hurriedly grabbed the phone off an end table by the bed and called 911. “I need an ambulance. I need it right now.”

While he gave them our location, I looked around the room. I saw that all four walls were broken apart. It was as if someone had been smashing into them. The full-length mirror by the bathroom was smashed too, by more than one fist.

“Tommy!” Rudi pleaded while she tried to get him to respond.

He wouldn’t. It was as if we weren’t there.

The song came to an end, and he hit the stop button on his Walkman. He followed this by reversing the tape a little and pressing play before he screamed “Keep me alive!” with Henry Rollins. He screamed it over and over.

Grandpa, Rudi, and I sat on chairs in a corridor of St. Barnabas, with one of us sitting a lot more impatiently.

Rudi’s anxiousness only increased. Seeing this, Grandpa took her hand. He took it much like how she had taken his in the car a week or so earlier. Like with him, this calmed her a little, and she turned to him and smiled, and he smiled back.

This was when she saw a large man in a white coat approaching us, along with the same frightened nurse I had seen in Tommy’s room when I had first met him. Again, she was wearing a mask and a pair of gloves, and again she looked frightened.

“That’s Dr. Kleiner,” Rudi uttered, and the three of us rose.

The doctor stopped in front of us while the nurse rushed off.

“How is he?” Rudi asked the doctor. She was almost begging.

“He seems determined to kill himself. And if he keeps up what he’s been doing, he’ll succeed. That I can promise you.”

“What can I do?”

“Ever heard of ‘tough love’?”

Rudi glanced at Grandpa, and she nodded.

“You’re the only one I see who can give it to him,” Kleiner told her.

Rudi started down the hall. Slowly she did.

“What are his chances?” whispered Grandpa to the doctor.

“Chances?” the man whispered back, as if it were a question he couldn’t comprehend.

“His chances for survival.”

“I don’t know of anyone who’s survived this or has experienced any kind of remission.”

“How long does he have?” I asked.

“That I can’t say with certainty,” the doctor answered as he turned toward me. “We don’t even have a name for this disease yet, apart from some vulgar and highly inaccurate ones. But I haven’t heard of a case like his where the patient has lived for more than a few months, and most of these weren’t as bad as his. Understand that his immune system is completely shot. If the Pneumocystis doesn’t kill him, something else will.”

The doctor started off, and I said, “Can I ask you something?”

“What?” he uttered, and he came to a stop and again turned to me.

“If it is true that you don’t know what causes the disease and how it spreads, how is it that you are not wearing a mask and gloves like that nurse you were with?”

The question made the doctor angry, so angry that he marched off. “I didn’t become a doctor to hide from sick people.”

Not knowing what else to do, Grandpa and I returned to our seats. In the silence that followed, I wanted to thank him for everything he had done, but it was he who thanked me.

“For what?” I gasped.

“For making me know my granddaughter. It would have been a great loss if I had not.”

“What about Grandma?”

“She will not be thanking you. Or me. Especially me. I may never again leave the living-room couch, and she just may move this outside.”

I returned to the shelter as a large truck arrived. It sputtered beside the gates in the alley and came to a grinding halt.

It was there to donate food from a local restaurant. This was not an uncommon sight, but it always surprised me how generous people were, especially in a city that wasn’t exactly thriving. People from nearby churches would often drop off food, and more than once dozens of pizzas arrived anonymously, just as they had in a Jason Stratham film I once saw called *Redemption*. After the second time it happened, I wondered if life was imitating art or whether it was the other way around. I wondered if this sort of thing happened all over.

This particular donation particularly shocked me. The restaurant donated many large cartons of choice steaks and ribs as well as lots of boxes of fresh fruit and vegetables. I think everyone in the shelter was overwhelmed by this. That’s probably why Josh didn’t even have to ask us to unload the truck. On our own, we formed a long chain from the alley through the dining hall and into the kitchen, and we passed the boxes between us while talking of what a great Christmas dinner this would all make.

It took more than a half-hour to get everything off the truck and into the freezer. But no one complained. We all had smiles on our faces. I think it made everyone feel that they were a small part of a gift that was anything but small.

Another letter from Tommy came for me. I got it from Josh during check-in, and I rushed into the courtyard with it and called Rudi. I could hear the anticipation in her voice, no matter how hard she tried to mask this.

It was difficult getting through the first handful of entries Tommy had sent me that day, as they were mostly incoherent.

In one he described his transfer to St. Barnabas after the hospital he was at originally refused to treat him once they learned what he had. In another he mentioned an argument with his mother in the hospital over both his disease and Rudi. She stormed out of the room at the end of it, and he was sure he’d never see her again and wasn’t sorry about it.

What he didn’t describe was his encounters with Rudi. He barely wrote about her, apart from a brief entry in which he lamented at how he’d never make love to her. He wrote even less about the disease that was ravaging him, and he didn’t mention why he left St. Barnabas.

After that, there were pages of nothing more than bits and pieces and streams-of-consciousness. I inferred from these that he moved from motel to motel. At all of them he drank himself to sleep every night, and he woke up this way.

Despite this, one morning he got on his bike and drove. One moment he was swerving through traffic on Route 22, and the next he had somehow made it to the waterfall. He spent all day there on the rocks, where he cursed himself and his fate as well as the certain something he blamed for it. He screamed this into the skies and beyond and only stopped when he ran out of vodka.

Again, he drove. He drove until he found himself in front of Vintage Vinyl. He wasn’t expecting much from the Black Flag record that he bought there. He only bought it because he remembered the T-shirt Rudi had been wearing on the day he met her and the tattoo that had been on Owen’s arm. Still, when he got home, he put the tape in his Walkman, and he put his headphones on and hit play.

This was when Henry Rollins crawled into his head. From then on it was he who did the screaming. Tommy would swear that he was screaming at him and him alone. He screamed at him all night. What surprised Tommy was how Rollins wasn’t just screaming about how life sucks. He screamed a lot more about how he wanted to do something about it and how he wouldn’t give into it or stop screaming about it.

Tommy found this inspiring, even if he didn’t know why. By the fourth time through the tape, all the darkness surrounding him had gone. There was only the music and the mad desperation to hope.

He sobered the next morning and again listened to the music. He listened to it all the time. It was the only thing that could keep him from his self-pity. The only thing that wouldn’t allow him to have it.

It was also what kept moving him forward. It got him up in the morning and got him to sleep every night, and it’s what led him to a punk club in the Alphabet City section of New York called A7, where he saw a band that I guessed was Ism, as he talked about them playing a cover of “I think I love you” as he sat on the floor in the corner of the room invisible to everything.

Tommy’s first lucid observation was after finding himself again at St. Barnabas and seeing Rudi hovering over him, looking angrier than he had ever seen her. But what he really noticed was how she was squeezing his hand. It felt as if she were going to break it apart.

He squirmed it away from her and spun from her. “Are you crazy? I’m infected!”

“You can’t get rid of me that easily anymore.”

“I told you to leave me alone.”

She didn’t listen. She retook his hand, and she squeezed it even harder than before.

Again, he tried to squirm it away. But she held on.

“Just go already,” he hollered at her.

“Not until you look at me.”

He wouldn’t. He shut his eyes and tried to will her away. But this didn’t work. She wasn’t going anywhere. So he opened his eyes and reluctantly turned back to her.

“There’s gonna be some changes around here,” she snarled. “From now on, you’re gonna take care of yourself, and you’re gonna do what that doctor tells you. And . . .”

She couldn’t finish, and Tommy watched the angry punk towering above him turn once more into the frightened little girl. The same he’d heard crying from inside the motel room. She fell apart in front of him, seam by seam. When there was nothing left to hold her together, her knees buckled, and she tumbled onto him, and she grasped him in her arms. “And you’re gonna love me. Because I love you. God, how I love you!”

“How could you love me?” he mumbled.

“I didn’t want to. I didn’t want to love anyone, including myself. But you’re the most magnificent person I’ve ever met or will ever meet. You make this whole miserable world worth it.”

Tommy didn’t say anything. But he felt the tears rolling down his cheeks.

“I’m sorry,” she whimpered. “I’m sorry for everything.”

“Sorry? You think I’m mad at you? Don’t you understand? I don’t want you to watch me die.”

“But I’m gonna watch you live, and there’s nothing you can do about it.”

Tommy again tried to resist her. He tried with everything left in his rotting body. But he couldn’t. This was when he knew he no longer belonged to himself and would never again. So he grasped her. He grasped her even harder than how she was grasping him as she screamed his name.

“I can’t live without you,” he whispered into her ear. “It’s not a figure of speech or hyperbole, or whatever the right term is. It just is.”

The nurse quickly pushed her medical cart out of Tommy’s room. As usual, she was wearing a mask and gloves and was looking as if she wanted to be anywhere but there.

Normally, this bothered Tommy, no matter how much he pretended it didn’t. But now it really didn’t matter. This was because of the man sitting on his bed beside him, who was wearing a suit and a kippah but no mask or gloves and who was leaning over him and holding his hand.

Tommy wrote how floored he was that this man he had revered his whole life was touching him and unafraid.

“Is there anything I could get you?” the man softly asked with a gentle smile.

“You think,” Tommy mumbled with some embarrassment, “you think you could get me a Bible?”

“Sure thing, Tommy. I’ll bring one tomorrow.”

The man released Tommy’s hand, and he rose and turned to the door, and he saw something that shocked him. Tommy noticed this, and he spun his head and saw Rudi nervously standing in the doorway wearing his football jacket and carrying a cold compress.

“Hey,” Tommy said to her.

“Hi,” she said back with her voice barely audible.

He nodded at the man. “This is Rabbi Orenstein, from my temple.”

Rudi forced a smile at him, and Tommy pointed at her. “This is my . . . my . . .”

“I’m his girlfriend,” she called out, I bet not only to the rabbi and to Tommy but to herself. With a burst of confidence, she stepped up to the rabbi and offered him her hand while telling him her name.

“It’s nice to meet you,” he let her know as he shook her hand with a smile. One that was anything but forced.

Releasing her hand, the rabbi turned back to Tommy. “I guess you’ll be going home soon.”

Tommy shook his head and without looking at the man.

“We’re getting a place,” Rudi interjected.

“Maybe,” Tommy countered.

“We agreed—”

“—You’re eighteen, Rudi. You shouldn’t be saddled with all this.”

“It’s my choice, not yours!”

“We don’t even know if I’m getting out of here.”

“You’re getting out of here.”

“I see,” the rabbi murmured while trying to hide his discomfort. “Well, there are some very nice apartments across the street. I’ve been inside a few. I think you can even rent them furnished.”

“They’d be way out of our price range,” Tommy insisted with another shake of his head. “We don’t even . . .”

“The synagogue actually has a fund set aside just for these kinds of situations.”

“You understand that we’re not married,” Rudi let the rabbi know.

“Ordinarily, that would be a problem. But under the circumstances . . .”

“I don’t know,” Tommy groaned while shaking his head once more.

The rabbi waved both him and his doubts off, and he started toward the door. “Let me handle everything.”

He left, with Rudi staring at the doorway. She stared at it long after the man was gone. “Are all rabbis like him?”

“I think they aspire to be,” Tommy answered as she sat on the bed and applied the compress to his face and forehead.

“I have a big surprise waiting for you.”

“Should I be worried?”

“Yup.”

“Well?”

“You have to get out of here to get it.”

I glanced at Rudi as the two of us stood in the hospital corridor in front of Dr. Kleiner. It didn’t seem she was breathing while she gazed at the doctor, who was reading through the medical chart in front of him. He read it many times over before he lowered it with a surprise he couldn’t hide. “It seems the Pneumocystis has passed.”

“Really?” Rudi gasped. “So he can go home?”

“I guess. But you need to be realistic about this, Ms. Weiss. There’s no cure for what he’s got, nor is there any on the horizon. I’ve got an obligation to be forthright with you. In cases like his . . .”

Rudi wouldn’t listen to the rest as she marched down the hall, refusing to allow reality to get in her way.

The door creaked opened, and Rudi helped Tommy inside it.

Turning on the light, she exposed a small but well-furnished one-bedroom apartment and a little golden-haired dog. This ran up to Tommy with her tail wagging furiously, and she jumped into his arms and licked his face over and over.

“She remembers me,” he uttered.

“How could a girl forget a hero?” Rudi said.

“So this is your big surprise. What’s she doing here?”

“No one claimed her. I talked to Dr. Kleiner, and he said a dog could be good for you. She’ll keep you company and give you something to do when I’m not home. And, to be honest, I really could use an unconditional friend. So we’ve adopted her.”

“*We?”*

Rudi grinned, and she scratched behind one of the dog’s ears. “We’re calling her ‘Flutter.’”

Tommy chuckled. “What about the matching dog collars?”

“They’re in the kitchen,” she answered with a nod and her own chuckle.

“All right,” he relented, and Flutter responded by licking his face even harder. She wouldn’t stop.

The excitement of having a home, and all the love inside it, was too much for Flutter. She fell asleep before dinner was over and was snoring loudly on the makeshift bed Rudi had set up for her on the kitchen floor.

Watching this with grins was Rudi and Tommy at a table steps away, where lay the remains of a Reservoir pizza and a pair of Cokes, just like what they had on their first date or whatever it was.

Slowly, Rudi rose from her seat. Just as slowly, she lifted Tommy to his feet by his hand, and she nervously led him to their open bedroom door, with Tommy feeling far more nervous than how she looked.

In the threshold, Tommy spotted his copy of *Damaged* against the wallon the floor, and he picked it up with a smile.

She smiled back. “That you were listening to that was a surprise to me.”

“It’s the best,” he let her know while continuing to smile at the record, “and I’m not the only one who thinks this.”

Rudi released Tommy’s hand, and she walked over to a portable stereo on an end table by the side of the bed and hit the play button, and they listened as the sounds of “Moonlight Serenade” filled the room.

Tommy pointed at the music in shock. “Where did you get that?”

“I found a copy of the record at the library, and I made an endless tape of it. You can listen to it all day if you want.”

“And never get tired of it.”

Noticing a small gift-wrapped package on the bed beside him, Tommy nodded at it. “What’s that?”

“A little housewarming gift.”

“*Rudi*. I should be the one giving gifts. You’ve given me too much already.”

“It’s nothing. Go on, open it.”

Tommy put down the record, and the two sat on the bed together, where he picked up the gift and opened the wrapping. He opened it gently so as not to tear it, and he uncovered her crumpled drawing of him set inside a simple black frame.

He grinned at it. “I’ve always wanted a picture of Lee Ving.”

She grinned back, and she pushed him onto the bed as she leaned down to kiss him.

But he stopped her. He stopped her with a shake of his head. “I can’t.”

“There are only a few things you can’t,” she grumbled, “and millions you can.”

He grinned once more. He grinned while thinking he would surely cry. But he controlled this for the moment as he caressed her cheek with the back of his hand. “The infinite possibilities.”

Tommy couldn’t put his first night with Rudi into words. He could only describe it in colors.

They trickled over him with every kiss and touch—shades of blue and yellow and violet. He not only saw them but could feel them in her lips and fingers, and he could hear them in Glenn Miller’s trombone. Then there was ivory. It was as if Michelangelo had carved her out of it. She was perfection. She was his perfection.

By the time he passed out, she had become his lover. Maybe not in every sense of the word, but in all the ones that mattered.

Tommy woke in the middle of the night.

At first, he was frightened because it was dark and he couldn’t see Rudi. He couldn’t tell she was there. But he realized she was asleep in his arms and that she was clinging to him. She held onto him as if he’d slip away if she let go.

This made him recall the afternoon by the waterfall when she put her head on his shoulder. He had thought this was the best he could feel, but it was nothing compared to holding her and protecting her and feeling her breathe against him. This would be his reason to live, he told himself, so that he could keep feeling her pressed against him.

“I’m never gonna die,” he whispered, and he repeated it again and again until he believed it.

I rang their apartment doorbell at around noon, with a big ceramic bowl in my arm that was wrapped in tinfoil.

Rudi answered the door, and I was surprised to see a Bible in her hand, with her finger marking the spot she’d been reading. It wouldn’t be the last time I’d catch her with a Bible or something like it, and she’d often be embarrassed by it, like she was right then. Quickly, she hid the book behind her back, and she nodded at the bowl. “Whatcha got there?”

“Grandpa wanted to give you guys a housewarming present. A jar of his *utopence*.”

“His what?”

“Pickled sausages.”

This made Rudi grimace.

“But we made you a salad instead.”

While holding back her tears, Rudi hugged me. She hugged me in the doorway for a long time.

“How’s next Saturday?” I called out from the dining room table, where I sat across from Tommy.

“I don’t know,” Rudi answered from the kitchen.

“You can’t avoid her forever.”

“It’s not me who’s been doing the avoiding.”

“Saturday will be fine,” Tommy said.

Rudi entered the room carrying the salad bowl in one hand and a large plate of omelets in the other, and she glared at Tommy, who smiled back. At the same time, Flutter started jumping up on Rudi to get at the food, and she told everyone: “Rule Number One: no feeding Flutter from the table. Breaking it will be a capital offense.”

Tommy and I nodded, and Rudi used a pair of thongs to serve the salad and the omelets. As she sat down, we all picked up our utensils, and Tommy and I glanced at each other and did so skeptically before trying the omelets, which surprised both of us.

“This is really good,” he gasped.

“Yeah,” I gasped back.

“What were you guys expecting?” she cried out.

“I don’t know,” I sheepishly mumbled. “Glass and nails?”

Tommy and I laughed. Even Rudi grinned before she playfully slapped my arm, sending me to the floor, where I noticed her feeding Flutter a tomato under the table. So I was still smiling when I returned to my seat.

It took a lot of cajoling from Grandpa and me to get Grandma to meet Rudi, and that was only after she stopped throwing things at us. Even once she agreed, she made it clear that it would be a one-time event.

The three of us waited outside Grandpa’s Olds in front of Rudi and Tommy’s apartment building. We waited awhile, with Grandma looking more uncomfortable with each moment that passed.

Slowly, the front door of the building opened, and Rudi and Tommy stepped out, and they forced smiles at us as they hesitantly approached.

Grandma sneered at Rudi, and she shook her head. “Just look at her. She . . . I do not even know what she is.”

I really don’t think the problem was how Rudi looked. I think it was how she reminded Grandma of my mother. There was far more fear on her face than disgust.

Tommy and Rudi stopped in front of us, and Rudi nervously uttered, “Hi.”

Grandma didn’t respond, and I wasn’t sure we’d make it through lunch or even get there. But something happened that made this seem small.

“Jeeeewww!” howled a voice from behind us.

We spun toward it and saw a car of laughing boys come to a stop at the red light a short distance away.

Everyone glanced at Grandpa, who shrugged it off and grinned, like he did whenever his Jewish looks got him unwanted notice. I had seen something like this happen to him more than once but never as bad as this. I could tell he wanted to make himself disappear.

I think all of us wanted to pretend it didn’t happen. All of us but Rudi. At the time, I thought her reaction came from having seen the number tattooed on Grandpa’s arm. But looking back at it now, I think she was remembering a time when she didn’t react, when she didn’t stand up to hate. Whatever her reason was, she rushed toward the car with her fists clenched.

“Where you going?” Tommy called out.

Rudi didn’t reply. She kept rushing toward the car.

“You can’t change the world!” Tommy hollered.

“Just watch me!” she hollered back.

She reached the car and picked up a rock, and she smashed the front passenger window with it, shattering it to pieces. She then leaned toward the boys and their frightened faces while brandishing the rock at them. “That’s my grandpa you’re laughing at.”

The driver didn’t even wait for the light to change. He sped through it. He sped through the next one too.

“Not much of a Nazi, I would say,” Grandpa whispered to Grandma.

Grandma didn’t looked so convinced. But at least we made it through lunch. We even made plans for a Sabbath dinner the following week.

While grabbing that night’s journal entries off the table along with the envelope, I said goodnight to Rudi and headed toward the dorm.

However, I stopped cold when I saw Josh exiting the dining hall with one of the large cartons of ribs we had brought inside. He carried it out of the shelter to the back of his red pickup truck outside the gate, where lay a lot of similar cartons. It was packed with them.

Tossing the carton next to the others, he returned to the dining hall and entered the kitchen, where he opened the freezer and grabbed another carton. As he came outside with it, he both noticed me and smiled. He did without the slightest worry. It was as if I were a fly who couldn’t harm him if I tried.

I continued watching him as he headed outside while realizing that not only the gift we had received but all the effort made by many to make it happen was for nothing. This was when that pesky “moral code” again began gnawing the inside of me.

the seventh night

I woke before dawn.

Though it wasn’t because of the waves of darkness passing over me or the demons pushing me into the floor. I realized I hadn’t felt them in days and didn’t know why. I couldn’t make sense of it. But I think it was because, unlike the times before, I wasn’t thinking about myself. I was thinking of anything but it.

I got my cup of green tea from the kitchen and walked into the courtyard and to the corner table. Only Allison was there, and it was obvious she was upset about something. So, as I sat across from her, I asked her what was wrong.

She didn’t reply, and a woman named Zara stopped in front of us and smiled at Allison. “I heard you got a job at Amazon. Congratulations.”

Allison didn’t reply to her either.

“Josh said that he could help me get a job there too,” the woman went on.

This made Allison grimace, and she picked up her coffee cup and cigarettes and walked off in a huff.

“It’s all gone,” Mitchell said to a group of guys sitting in a booth down from me. “All the ribs and all the steaks we carried into the freezer last night. Every one of those cartons. Someone stole them all.”

Matt shrugged, as if he had been expecting it. “So much for that Christmas dinner.”

“The only thing they left was the fruit and vegetables.”

Phil grinned. “They must’ve been thinking of our health.”

Everyone laughed, including me. I guess we were like those creatures in Whoville who woke to empty houses on that famous Christmas morning. It didn’t matter that the Grinch had stolen our gift. It really was the thought that counted, and this was something that no one could steal, not even Josh.

I was power-washing the sidewalks outside the motel when Matt and one of the cleaning ladies walked by. They were talking about the company Christmas party that was happening the following week. They’d been talking about it since I got the job in the summer. Almost every day they talked about it. I could always hear the longing in their voices, as if this were the best thing they had to look forward to. It made me wonder if, from the day after the party, they’d be talking about next year’s.

“Hey,” came an accented voice from behind me.

I turned around, and I saw Amoun and his smile.

“I have some good news for you,” he told me. “I’ve decided to make you full-time at the beginning of the year. I am even going to raise your salary, all the way up to minimum wage. How does that sound?”

I chuckled.

“Happy Chanukah,” he added with another of his smiles, and he patted me on the shoulder and walked off.

The news should’ve made me happy. With a full-time job, I could’ve left the shelter. Matt and I were even talking about getting an apartment together. Maybe I’d even be able to keep the darkness away for good.

So I was trying to understand why I wasn’t happy. This was when I noticed a pair of addicts inside the room across the way, who were breaking open the seal that kept the windows permanently sealed.

One by one, they started tossing their things outside, probably so they wouldn’t have to pass the reception area and something waiting for them there. It was pathetic, but I wondered if watching them was more so.

I approached the shelter as an ambulance raced from it.

Hurriedly, I stepped inside the gates and came up to Hector, and I asked him what had happened.

“Jennifer had a stroke. Just like that. One moment she’s talking with a couple of people in a booth and the next she’s on the ground.”

My eyes turned toward the courtyard and to Billy, who was sitting on a bench surrounded by others. They were trying to comfort him, but his life had just sped off. He had no way of even getting to the hospital.

It was a somber line of people who waited to check in that night. I think all our thoughts were with Billy and perhaps on our own fragility. So I was happy to think about something else when I got Tommy’s letter from Josh. With it gripped in my fist, I rushed into the courtyard to call Rudi. But I couldn’t do this right away, as I learned I had “volunteered” for street showers.

Two nights a week, we let people living on the streets come inside the shelter for a shower. Most of them had been clients of it at one time, who’d been kicked out of it for various reasons. Instead of moving on, they camped out in the alley not far from the gates or a little down it behind Starbucks.

I never understood what kept them there. Maybe it was because they had nowhere else to go. Or maybe it just didn’t matter where they went. One of these people even volunteered at the shelter. I’d always see him helping out with lunch whenever I was around. His name was Len and was once a lawyer. He still kind of looked like one under the decay.

My job that night was to sit in the men’s room for the next few hours and watch them. I had to watch them undress before they showered, and I had to watch them dress again in their dirty clothes afterward. Why we had to do this to them, why we had to dehumanize them even more than they already were, was anyone’s guess. Certainly no one could explain it to me.

Like the addicts I had earlier seen escaping the motel, these people were pathetic. But, like them, they weren’t as pathetic as me. Trying not to face this, I positioned my chair in their general direction and took out Tommy’s letter, and I called Rudi.

Knowing we would likely again come upon some of the more difficult parts of the story, I asked her if she was ready for this. But I think I was more readying myself.

I rang the doorbell as my grandparents and I waited outside Tommy and Rudi’s apartment door. I noticed that Grandma once more didn’t look excited, but this time she wasn’t grimacing, and I took this as a hopeful sign.

The door swung open, along with the unmistakable aroma of challah and potato knishes baking in the oven, and an anxious Rudi let us inside. While Tommy and Flutter greeted my grandparents, I followed Rudi as she hurried toward the kitchen and noticed a big pan of kasha cooking on the stove.

“What’s wrong?” I asked her.

She stopped and spun back to me in exasperation. “I can’t get the matzo balls right.”

Loudly, Grandma sighed, and she turned to Rudi. “How did you prepare the chicken fat?”

“They’re vegetarian matzo balls.”

“In chicken soup?”

“Parsley soup.”

The shock of this almost sent Grandma to the floor. She had to grip the sofa with both hands as she gasped, “Vegetarian matzo balls in parsley soup?” Glancing at Grandpa, she added, “Have you ever heard of such a thing?”

“Just now,” Grandpa deadpanned.

Grandma hissed at him, and she waved him off with both her hands before taking hold of Rudi by the arm and leading her into the kitchen. “Let us see what we can do.”

“At least, Gertie,” Grandpa called out to her, “at least you will not have to worry about eating something unkosher.”

“Gertie?” Rudi muttered. “Your name is . . .”

“Gertrud,” Grandma told her.

“So I’m . . .”

“You have apparently been named after me.”

I was hoping this revelation would make a crack in the ice, but the two couldn’t stop arguing. They argued over the stove while trying countless combinations of ingredients. A couple of times they even came close to blows. But damn if those wouldn’t be the best matzo balls I’d ever eat.

Before dinner could start, Rudi had to light the Sabbath candles and recite the blessing over them. I think we were all nervous for her, even Grandma. Silently, we watched her put a scarf over her head and light the candles, and I could see she was the most nervous of all. Her hands were shaking.

Lighting the candles was easy. So was waving the spirit of their light into her home with her hands. Much harder was singing the Hebrew blessing. None of us knew what to expect when she began. I’m sure she didn’t. Then came her voice and all the quiet that rumbled through the room in response to it.

Sensing this, Rudi turned to us. “That bad?”

No one answered, but I’m sure “bad” wasn’t the word on any of our minds. However, Grandma did look pained for some reason. Noticing this, Rudi put down the scarf and stepped up to the woman and asked her what was wrong.

“Your voice,” Grandma yelped with her head shaking, “it is just like your mother’s.”

The two stared at each other. They kept this up until Grandma broke down and put her arms around Rudi.

Rudi didn’t react. She just stood there.

“I miss her so much,” Grandma mumbled as she started to cry.

It took a few seconds, but Rudi put her arms around the woman as she tried to hold back her own emotions. “I miss her too. I don’t want to, but I do.”

“She never could let herself be a part of us.”

This made Rudi smile. From what she would say next, I think it was because she finally understood where Grandma was coming from. “‘Your people are my people,’” she whispered, quoting from the book of Ruth. “‘Your God is my God.’’”

Grandma cried even more, and she gripped Rudi harder and replied with a quote from the same verse. “‘And not even death shall separate us.’”

We were so stuffed after dinner that none of us could move. This included Flutter, who was sprawled out on the floor.

“Grandpa,” Rudi said, “I want to hear the rest of your Kafka story.”

“*Oy vey!”* Grandma shrieked. “Do not get him started. You will never get him out of your house.”

Everyone laughed, especially Grandpa. But he wasn’t going to let an opportunity like this go to waste. So, after he filled Tommy in on the beginning of the story, he brought it to an end.

#

“Brod!” Hašek yelled as he followed the man down the hospital corridor.

Hermann knew that none of this was his business. But he couldn’t help peek into the hallway, where he saw Hašek racing after Brod in his wheelchair.

“If you don’t stop,” Hašek cried out while panting for air, “I will follow you to Prague. I will haunt you to your last days if I have to. I swear I will!”

Brod slowly came to a halt, but he didn’t turn around as Hašek rolled up to him and stopped. Awkwardly, Hašek lifted himself out of the chair, and he grabbed hold of Brod for balance and uttered, “What does Kafka want you to burn?”

Brod didn’t answer. So Hašek shook him. He shook him and howled, “Answer me!”

“His novels,” Brod replied.

“He has written novels?”

Brod nodded.

“Are they like his stories?”

“Better.”

“Better? And you, you’re gonna burn them?”

“What else can I do?”

Hašek threw Brod and himself into the nearby wall and forced the man to face him. “What gives you the right?”

“Me?” gasped Brod. “Their not mine. Their his.”

“What gives him the right? The selfish little kike!”

“Let go of me!”

“Listen to me, you worthless wretch, you’re gonna publish those novels, every last one.”

“No.”

“The greatest writer Prague has known, and you’d turn his poetry into ash? You’d be damned. For such crime there can be no absolution!”

“Let me go!”

Brod pushed Hašek away, causing him to fall onto the floor, and he rushed off.

“You won’t burn them, Brod!” Hašek hollered. “I know you won’t!”

Hermann returned to his bed.

“What was that screaming about?” Kafka asked.

Hermann turned from the man. “I really can’t say.”

Hašek came back to the room, and he glared at Kafka. He glared as he slowly approached.

“What was that all about?” Kafka demanded.

“I don’t see how it’s any of your business,” Hašek growled, and he turned and started toward his bed. But he didn’t go far. He came to a stop with his back to both men and without saying a word.

“Is something wrong?” Kafka wanted to know.

Hašek lowered his head. “You are looking at a jealous man, Herr Kafka.”

“I don’t understand.”

“When I told you the other day that I had read some of your stories, I lied.”

“What do you mean?”

“I’ve read them all. Every single one. I still have them in my home. You see, I’m jealous of you. Jealous of your talent and accomplishments.”

“Me?”

“I wish I could write like you, that my words could flow like yours do, from the page onto someone’s soul. But I’m just a scribbler. It doesn’t matter how many books I sell. It doesn’t change this. Nothing can.”

Slowly, Hašek turned his teary face toward Kafka. “I never even cared about the money. All I wanted was to be considered a real writer and not just some peddler of dreck as you called it. You wanna know why I got so mad at you the other day? Because you weren’t the first one who called *Švejk* that. That’s what the publishers called it. That’s what they all called it. That’s why I had to put it out myself. No one would touch it. Not because they thought it wouldn’t sell. They knew it would. But because they didn’t want to be associated with dreck or with me.”

Hašek started off. He did so quickly.

“I don’t really think *Švejk* is dreck,” Kafka called out, causing Hašek to come to another stop. “I was just lashing out at you. The truth is . . . the truth is I loved every page. Every single page. You’re a modern-day Rabelais, Mr. Hašek. A Cervantes even. And if publishers can’t see that, never you mind. History will prove them wrong.

“Let me tell you a little story. Not so long ago, I was crossing Palačák when I saw a group of boys playing out a scene from *Švejk*. The last one from the first book, if I remember right. The one where Lieutenant Lukáš curses out Švejk for stealing the colonel’s dog. These boys, they knew it so perfectly, and you should’ve seen them laugh. Through them, Mr. Hašek, Švejk will live on past you. He will live forever. These children will pass him onto their children and their children’s children. And do you know Max is preparing a German translation of it?”

“He is?” gasped Hašek.

“Soon the whole world will know Švejk and will love him as we do. He is all of us. Our follies and our fears but most of all our joys.

“I should be the one who’s envious. Envious of you. I’ll be forgotten before I’m lowered into the ground.”

“Don’t be so sure, Herr Kafka,” Hašek told him as he rubbed the tears off his chubby face. “Don’t be so sure.”

All afternoon and into the evening Hermann tried to convince Kafka to go home with him. But every reason he came up with, every justification he made for Kafka to keep living was either refuted or ignored. So he gave up and went to sleep, consigned to leaving the following day without him.

In the middle of the night, Hermann woke, and he saw Kafka reading from a thin hardcover book, an edition of *The Metamorphosis*. He was looking at it as if it were his own child.

Hermann stretched his arms and yawned, and he smiled at the man. “I think I’ve found the best reason yet for you to live.”

Kafka ignored him and turned a page in his book.

“It’s rather selfish, I’ll admit,” Hermann went on, “but I’d sure like to read another of your stories. I bet I’m not the only one.”

Hermann again woke. This time it was morning, and he saw that Kafka was hovering over him and dressed in a suit, with his open suitcase on his bed.

“You better hurry,” the man told him. “There’s only one train out of here, and it leaves in a half-hour.”

At once, Hermann jumped out of bed. But he stopped cold when he noticed his night shirt. “My clothes.”

“I just sent Nurse Černá to get them.”

Hermann grinned, and he noticed that Kafka’s copy of *The Metamorphosis* was lying on his own end table, and he pointed at it. “What’s this doing here?”

“Consider it a belated Chanukah gift.”

Hermann picked up the book and opened the cover, and he saw that it was inscribed to him. “Thank you, Herr Kafka. Thank you.”

Kafka was about to reply when he was interrupted, by the screeching sound of wheels. They both turned toward it and saw Hašek approaching them.

The man came to a stop with a dour expression. “I was wondering if you gentlemen would do me the honor of accompanying me to the dock.” He then raised his big fist and showed them the one-heller coin between his fingers.

Kafka wheeled Hašek to the staircase, the one on the cliff overlooking the river, with Hermann a few steps behind them.

Hašek glanced down, at both the staircase and the handful of people boarding the boat from the dock, and he shook his head. “I didn’t realize there were so many steps. I don’t know if I can make it.”

“But we can,” Kafka told him as he offered him his hand.

Hašek took it, and Kafka lifted him to his feet.

“I can see it now,” Hašek muttered while gazing into Kafka’s eyes.

“See what?” Kafka asked.

“Your father.”

Kafka grinned, and the two started down the steps. They did with their arms around each other and with each complementing the other to the extent that they appeared as one healthy body.

“Can I call you Franta?” Hašek wondered.

“You may,” Kafka answered.

“And you, you call me Jarda. That’s what my friends call me.”

It took a while, but the two reached the dock. Hašek paid Charon his fare, and Kafka helped him into the boat, which began to pull away.

“You know what?” Hašek called out, with his face beaming with joy as it reflected the blinding sun. “I’m no longer so afraid.”

“Neither am I,” Kafka called back as he waved his friend goodbye. “Neither am I.”

#

Grandma threw her arms up toward the heavens. “Even Kafka must be tired of hearing that story.”

Everyone laughed, especially Grandpa.

“Well, I liked it,” Rudi asserted as she grabbed Tommy’s hand.

I could tell by the expression on her face that Grandpa had been right. The story really did have meaning for her. Perhaps it had the same kind of meaning that that Black Flag record had had for Tommy.

Spring came, and with it Tommy’s eighteenth birthday. This would’ve been a big accomplishment for anyone but for him it was especially big. To celebrate it, Grandma made him dinner at our house. As a way of welcoming him into our family, she made every Czech dish she knew that could be made without meat. The list of these was short but delicious and included stuffed peppers and fruit dumplings and fried mushrooms.

The next day Rudi held a party for Tommy by the waterfall, after telling everyone that the only gift they were to bring was themselves. I guess she recognized how difficult it would’ve been getting gifts for him.

What do you give someone who’s about to die?

I drove Tommy and Rudi and Flutter to the falls early that afternoon, along with a cake Rudi had baked, a few boxes of Reservoir pizza, and some soda.

Owen and Eliot were already there. Then Jared and Beth came, and so did Maria and her new girlfriend Wendy. A motley bunch we were that day, sitting on the rocks in the bright sun while listening to a tape of Tommy’s favorite Yardbirds songs that Rudi had made. As Tommy and Owen argued over whether Jeff Beck or Jimmy Page was the better guitarist, I glanced at everyone. I glanced especially at myself. It was hard to find a shred of commonality. There was no rationale for us spending this time together, but here we all were. Here we all belonged, even me.

I helped Rudi carry everything back to the car as the party ended, and she asked me to bring Tommy back from the falls while she said goodbye to the others on Crest Drive. As I returned to the rocks, I saw Tommy sitting on the edge of them next to Jared and Beth. They were staring into the ravine below.

“A couple of people I know back home have the same thing,” Jared told Tommy, with Beth holding on to him from behind. “It’s only dumb luck that I don’t.”

“Maybe there could be a reason,” Tommy said.

“What reason could there be for me to live and not you?”

“I didn’t mean it like that. I mean what you’ve survived could give you a reason to do something you wouldn’t’ve done. Something big.”

It was still early when we left the reservation.

We passed South Mountain Elementary School down the road from the woods, where Tommy noticed a sign outside. Reading Is Fundamental was having a readathon on the blacktop behind the school and volunteers were welcome.

“Let’s do it,” he cried out in excitement.

“Are you sure you’re up for it?” Rudi asked.

“I’m sure. Come on, it’ll be fun.”

Rudi and I could tell that Tommy was tired, but we couldn’t refuse him on his birthday. So I drove down a steep hill to the large lot behind the school, where dozens of children were waiting along with a handful of adults, who were organizing everyone into reading groups.

Not surprisingly, most of the adults looked frightened when they caught a glimpse of Rudi. But what was surprising was how the kids weren’t. Her appearance drew them as if she were some kind of superhero, and maybe she was. They all surrounded her and wanted to be part of her group, and they liked Flutter and the matching dog collars the two had on.

“Be gentle,” Rudi told the children as they encircled the dog and began petting her. “She’s been through some rough times.”

The kids, many of which had likely been through their own rough times, took heed. They treated her as if she were a baby.

All three of us headed reading groups on the field behind the blacktop, along with lots of others. But Rudi’s group was the largest and got the most attention. The kids in hers all took turns sitting on her lap while others sat next to Flutter, and she patiently helped them voice out the syllables that made up each of the tales they read. Like what she had done with Owen, I bet she was repaying a debt that afternoon, for when that librarian took the time to teach her how to read.

All day we read with the kids. But Rudi did nonstop without a break, and it was impossible to tell who was enjoying it more. The happiness was all over her face.

The sun started to fall, and the organizers of the event had to reluctantly shut it down. This sent the kids in Rudi’s group shrieking in disappointment. But I think Rudi was the most disappointed of them all.

“You should become a teacher,” the woman running the event told Rudi as we were leaving. Earlier, she had been the most frightened person there, but now she had a big smile on her face.

She wasn’t the only one. Rudi smiled all the way to the car.

It seemed Tommy stayed healthy in the months that followed, and he stayed out of the hospital. There were days I couldn’t tell he was sick or could easily pretend it. I could pretend these wonderful days, the best I’d ever know, would last forever.

Though there were a lot of things I couldn’t see about Tommy and would only learn from his journal. They still hadn’t given his disease a name yet, at least one that everyone could agree on, and there were no treatments for it. All Dr. Kleiner could do for him was treat his symptoms, and these were endless.

Among them were the Kaposi lesions that would appear on his face and body. Like what Rudi had done with Maria, she taught Tommy how to use makeup. She did such a good job of it that I never knew about the lesions or the makeup.

Rudi’s care didn’t end with this. She’d often have to change their bedsheets in the middle of the night because of all the sweating Tommy would do. Sometimes she’d do this two or three times a night. What’s more, she had to nurse him through every little cold and sickness, as any one could’ve been fatal.

A big reason I never knew about all of this was Rudi never let on how much they were struggling. I remember her as happy at this time. I would never see her as happy as she was with him.

Despite their troubles, Tommy and Rudi developed the kind of everyday routines that any couple would have. This included taking long walks into the woods with Flutter, “the beautiful afternoons of normalness,” as Tommy would call them, where they would argue about everything and anything. There was nothing they could agree on, but it never mattered to him because there was never a moment that approached dull, especially when she was holding his hand.

The two also went to Dr. Kleiner’s office every week, where they went over his condition and got the latest test results and prognoses. No matter how depressing this got, Rudi would always find something positive. Then one time she couldn’t.

“I’ve got some great news for you two,” the doctor said to them across from his desk. “I finally found a hospice that’s willing to take Tommy.”

“Hospices are for people who’ve given up,” Rudi growled.

“It would make both your lives easier.”

To Tommy, a hospice sounded good. He was tired of fighting the disease, and he wanted to ease Rudi’s burden. He wanted her to have some kind of life outside of him.

But Rudi would have nothing of it. “We’re not giving up. We’re not.”

Another of Rudi and Tommy’s routines was spending their Saturdays at Vintage Vinyl, where they’d bring lunch and listen to records all day with Butch.

They didn’t just listen to records they liked. Often they’d pick one at random and listen to the whole thing. They listened to records they never would’ve otherwise, such as *Johnny Cash at Folsom Prison* and *Patti LaBelle*. They liked the latter so much that they bought it and had Butch make a tape of it for them.

They also listened to that Coltrane album I saw the first time I was at the store. Tommy wrote in his journal how the music blew him away. But he said it was nothing compared to the poem Coltrane wrote in the liner notes, to which he played his saxophone in the record’s final movement. Two lines of it, in particular, grabbed him and wouldn’t let go:

*God breathes through us so completely . . .*

*So gently we hardly feel it . . .*

Rudi and Tommy didn’t spend all that time at Vintage Vinyl just for the music or even the poetry. A big reason they went was for Butch, who’d make them laugh all day long. This was made possible because Butch didn’t care about Tommy’s disease and refused to treat him differently because of it. He was just as rude to him as he was to everyone else.

Rudi graduated high school early in the summer, and she got a job. One that was personal for her. She worked at the first counseling center in the state to help the increasing number of those diagnosed with what had just been named AIDS.

Often, she worked on Saturdays. On one of these, I drove Tommy to Vintage Vinyl in her place. As we stepped out of the car with a pizza, I noticed how thin he had gotten, especially in the face, and I realized that was probably why he was always wearing an Oakland A’s baseball cap when he went out, so you couldn’t see it as much.

Even with the cap, I saw how Tommy’s hair was no longer as thick and wavy as it was when I first met him. But his smile was the same, which was on display to the whole world as we stepped into the almost empty store.

“You got the new DKs album,” I blurted out with surprise the moment I saw it in the stacks.

“Go ahead,” Butch told me with a nod and a grin as he pulled out a slice of pie, “put it on.”

Quickly, I grabbed the record and rushed behind the counter with it to the turntable as Tommy stepped up to Butch.

“Rudi’s having a birthday soon,” Tommy mentioned.

“Me too,” I mentioned back, as I put the second side of *Plastic Surgery Disasters* on the player, which was something I always did when listening to a record for the first time.

“Him too,” Tommy said with a grin as the unmistakable sound of the Dead Kennedys filled the store. You could tell it was them from the first chord. “The thing is, I don’t know what to get her, and he’s no help at all.”

“Well, don’t look at me,” Butch groaned. “There’s a reason why I’m single.”

“But you guys like the same things.”

“Except you.”

“Come on, if you were having a birthday and could have anything you wanted, what would it be?”

Butch didn’t even need a second to answer this. “To see Bad Brains live.”

“They’re good?”

“They’re good,” I said.

“Do they play at that A7 place?”

“They usually play at CBGB when they’re up here,” Butch told him. “But they just went back to DC a little while ago.”

“What about . . . what about Black Flag?”

“They’re in LA. They do come out here to play sometimes, but the hell if I know when.”

“Lee Ving?”

“You mean Fear? I think they’re also in LA.”

Tommy meekly pointed at the record I was playing. “Them?”

“San Francisco.”

Tommy sighed. “Is there anyone good playing around here?”

“I think I’ve got some flyers for CBGB somewhere.”

Butch looked under the counter. He looked in and through all the clutter down there, and he pulled out a bunch of papers and put them on the counter, and Tommy saw a name on one of them that made him shine.

Rudi dragged herself into her apartment after a long day of work, only to find Tommy dragging her back out.

“Where are we going?” she whined when he led her into the corridor.

“You’ll see,” he explained as she shut their door just before Flutter could run out. Though this didn’t stop the dog from being heard.

Tommy kept dragging, and the two approached the front door of the building.

Rudi resisted, and she shook her head. “I’m really beat.”

“You won’t be,” he insisted, and he flung himself and her outside, where they saw a tall driver in a black uniform waiting for them by a long white limousine. The kind she might’ve ridden if she had gone to her high school prom.

As tired as she was, Rudi couldn’t help grin. “What’s going on?”

He grinned back. “There’s only one way to find out.”

The limousine crawled its way through traffic in lower Manhattan before coming to a stop beside a parked car not far from CBGB.

Rudi glanced out the window. “Why are we stopping here?”

Tommy answered by pointing at a flyer on a wall that revealed Richard Hell was performing that night, and he whispered, “Happy Birthday.”

She responded first with shock. Then she started kissing him. She kissed him again and again and wouldn’t stop.

*kisses are a better fate than wisdom*

Tommy recalled the words of the poet, the ones he’d heard coming out of that classroom on the day he met Rudi, and he recalled the man’s overly-romanticized notions of life and knew they were all true.

Hand-in-hand, Rudi and Tommy passed through the crowded bar on their way to the back where the bands played.

“Rudi?” called out a female voice.

Rudi released Tommy’s hand, and she turned to a short young woman with blue hair and facial piercings, who was standing alongside a small group of punks that made Rudi look conservative.

“Leila?” Rudi howled in surprise, and she hugged the woman.

“Where have you been?” Leila screeched as she hugged Rudi back. “We haven’t seen you anywhere.”

“Busy. I’ve been busy.”

The two broke their embrace, and Rudi briefly said hello to the others. Grabbing Tommy’s hand, she introduced him, leading to some uncomfortable gazes, as Tommy didn’t fit in with them any better than Rudi had with anyone he knew. But he didn’t take it personally. He forced a smile and turned to Rudi. “I’ll meet you by the stage.”

“I’ll go with you,” she told him.

“Stay with your friends.”

“But . . .”

He nodded toward a set of nearby doors. “I gotta go to the bathroom anyway.”

Tommy was burning up when he entered the graffiti-covered men’s room. He was so sick he had to lean against a wall, and he slid all the way down it to the floor and wasn’t sure he’d be able to get up.

“You missed Bad Brains,” came Leila’s exasperated voice from outside the bathroom. “You missed every show.”

“I didn’t even know they were in town,” Rudi said.

“I thought you loved them.”

“I do. I listen to that tape you gave me all the time. I’m not sure I’d get through a day without it.”

“We’re gonna follow them to DC. We’re leaving right after the show. Why don’t you come with us?”

“I can’t.”

“Why not?”

“I’ve got something better to do.”

“What could be better than Bad Brains?”

“I can think of only one thing.”

“It’s got something to do with that guy, doesn’t it?”

“It has everything to do with him.”

“Who is he anyway?”

“I told you, his name is Tommy.”

“Yeah, but *who* is he?”

“The boy I love.”

“The boy you what?”

“He’s what gets me through the night.”

Suddenly, Tommy didn’t feel so sick. He even felt himself rising off the floor.

Tommy took a seat at an empty table not far from the stage while he realized something. For a long time, he had thought he needed Rudi much more than she needed him and that their relationship was one-sided. But after hearing what she had just told Leila, he started doubting this, and this didn’t make him happy. It scared him knowing that he wasn’t going to be around for long. It scared him so much that it put him in a daze. He only came out of this when Rudi jumped onto his lap.

“*Rudi*,” he grumbled.

“What?” she grumbled back.

“It’s your birthday. Hang out with your friends.”

“They’re not my friends. Not really. We just like all the same music and hate all the same things. That doesn’t make you a friend.”

Rudi smiled, and she started singing to him. “*You are my friend.*” She sang it just like Patti LaBelle had on the record the two so unexpectedly came to love. Putting her head on his chest, she added, “You’re my friend even though you don’t like all the same music or hate all the same things. You’re my friend in spite of it.”

She reached up to touch Tommy’s face and felt how hot it was. This caused her to jump up. “You’re sick, Tommy. We’ve been through this over and over. You gotta tell me when you’re sick.”

“I’m fine,” he whined.

“We gotta go home.”

“We gotta stay.”

“Do you want to go back to the hospital?”

“I’m going back no matter what. But not tonight. Tonight we’re watching Richard Hell.”

“Why?”

“Because it’s your birthday!”

“Don’t you get it? Every day’s my birthday. Every day I come home to you it’s my birthday. Every day I wake up to you it’s my birthday. I don’t need this.”

But Tommy wouldn’t relent. He wouldn’t budge. Nor would he let her make a fuss over him. So she just held onto him and hoped for the best, and they waited for Hell and his band to play.

When they took the stage, they played “Blank Generation,” the song that helped two lonely people see that they weren’t so alone. Tommy noted that, as Hell sang the song, probably for the millionth time, if he had only looked into the crowd, he might’ve seen the two not far away, with their arms and bodies entwined, looking up at him as if he were singing the most beautiful love song ever written.

As Tommy expected, he returned to the hospital, and I think we all wondered if he’d ever leave, especially him. But we were also determined to make these days happy for him. For Tommy that meant reading every great book there was, and I raided my grandparents’ library to make this happen.

On one of these raids, in a darkened nook I came upon a thin hardcover book that caught my attention. A first edition of *The Metamorphosis*.

“It can’t be,” I muttered as I pulled the book out and opened its cover. Even with my bad German, I could read the inscription:

*To my good friend Hermann,*

*Franz Kafka*

I had always known there was a lot of truth underneath Grandpa’s Kafka story, but I had always been sure that it was well underneath it. Now I wasn’t so sure.

I came to Tommy’s room with a big stack of books under my arm.

Rudi was reading to him while lying next to him on the bed, below the drawing hanging on the wall of a boy who longed for something he couldn’t express. She was reading from another book that had come from my grandparents’ library: *The Collected Poems of E. E. Cummings*.

*here is the deepest secret nobody knows*

*(here is the root of the root and the bud of the bud*

*and the sky of the sky of a tree called life;which grows*

*higher than soul can hope or mind can hide)*

*and this is the wonder that’s keeping the stars apart*

*i carry your heart(i carry it in my heart)*

“I think your poem is better,” Tommy told her.

Rudi chuckled. “You’re a bad liar.”

“So I’ve been told.”

I knocked on the door, and they turned and greeted me.

Stumbling off the bed with the thick book, Rudi sat in a chair beside it next to a bureau, on top of which stood a box of Reservoir pizza and some Cokes. While I put my books next to another stack on the bureau on the other side of Tommy’s bed, Rudi pulled out a fresh slice of pie and tried to feed it to Tommy.

Despite all the weight he was losing, he wouldn’t eat it. He grimaced and shook his head, and he turned toward me.

I gazed at the old stack. “You done with these?”

He nodded, and I picked up the books while noticing a copy of *Ficciones* under the pizza box, which I pointed at. “What about the Borges?”

He shook his head.

“You’re telling me you can get through Boccaccio and Potocki in a couple of days but can’t finish that little book?”

“I can’t stop reading it.”

“What so special about it?” wondered Rudi.

“I’ll show you,” he said as he weakly reached for the book.

She put down her pizza, and she grabbed the paperback and gave it to him.

Slowly, he flipped through the pages, and he found the story he wanted. “This is my favorite. ‘The Secret Miracle.’”

“That’s Grandpa’s favorite too,” I let them know. “He reads it every year on the anniversary of his first wife’s death.”

“It’s set in Prague,” Tommy said to Rudi, “just like he was.”

“What’s it about?” she asked as she took the book from him and curiously glanced at the story’s first page.

“This playwright during World War II. The Nazis arrest him and sentence him to death, and he’s really upset about this.”

“I should think so.”

“But he’s not upset about dying. Well, maybe he’s a little upset about that. But what really upsets him is that he’ll never write his opus, his reason for being. So one night he begs God for a one-year reprieve, so he can write his play. And, guess what, God grants him his wish.”

“So he doesn’t get shot?”

“Oh, he gets shot, all right. Right on time.”

“I don’t get it.”

“On the morning of his execution, the soldiers stand him up against a wall and shoot him. Though, as the bullets fire, everything freezes. Even the playwright freezes. But what’s a fraction of a second for everyone else becomes a year to him, and he gets to write his play in his head. He doesn’t even care that no one will ever see it or know about it. It’s enough that he knows he’s accomplished something, and he gets to die happy. Isn’t that wonderful?”

Rudi shrugged as she lowered her eyes in disappointment. “I guess.”

Tommy turned to me and grinned. “She’s not much of a believer, no matter how often her nose is in that Bible.”

This angered Rudi. She rose from her seat with the book clutched in her fist. “How could I believe in a God that would allow this to happen?”

Not waiting for an answer, she stormed out of the room. I wonder if she even realized that the book was still in her hand.

Happily, Tommy stared into the empty doorway. “I already have my opus. My reason for being.”

I stayed with Tommy late into the night. I stayed with him until he fell asleep. For hours we discussed the books he had just read. He had so much enthusiasm for them that I felt guilty for taking them for granted. I felt guilty for taking lots of things for granted.

Leaving Tommy’s room under the weight of the books he had finished, I saw Rudi sitting on the floor outside his room. She was staring into the Borges book.

“You all right?” I mumbled.

She didn’t reply.

I sat next to her and noticed that she was gazing at the last page of “The Secret Miracle.”

“Did you read it?” I whispered.

She shook her head but not at my question. “It’s not a story. It’s not fiction. It’s not.”

“That’s his style. All his writing reads like that. You know, like he were making an authentic and objective observation.”

“No, it’s true. Every word of it. I just know it.”

I didn’t know what to say to her. Years later, I would find the truth in Borges’ works overwhelming, especially in this story. But back then it was only a story to me. Still, I took Rudi’s hand, and she started crying. She cried and leaned her head on my shoulder, and I cried with her.

I woke before sunrise.

As I rose to my waist, I heard the sound of voices and music coming from downstairs.

“I think it is heroic what you are doing for those people,” spoke Grandma in the kitchen, with an old German cabaret record playing in the den next to it.

“They’re the heroes,” Rudi told her. “Every day they humble me.”

I wasn’t too shocked hearing the two, despite how early it was. It seemed they talked every day over the phone, sometimes well into the night, and they got together as often as they could. I guess they were trying to make up for lost time.

“You are still grating the potatoes too fine,” Grandma said.

“*Sakra!”* Rudi cried out in exasperation.

“You speak Czech! Did your mother teach you?”

“My brother.”

“Oh, do not learn it from him. He speaks it almost as badly as your grandfather. I will teach you. I will teach you all its poetries. It is so beautiful that people do not just speak it. They sing it.”

“What’s that music you’re listening to?”

“Dora Gerson. My first husband and I, we would drive to Berlin all the time just to hear her sing.”

“It’s wonderful.”

“You really like it?”

“I think I’ll make a tape of it. I bet Tommy would like it too.”

“You always surprise me, Rudi. It is such a joy at my age to be surprised.”

“What is she singing about?”

“Times that can never return.”

The two started dancing. I could hear their footsteps on the linoleum floor as well as Grandma’s voice as she sang with the music:

*Vorbei, vorbei, vorbei —*

*Ein letztes Wort,*

*Ein letzter Gruß — vorbei*

Grandma’s voice began to break, and I wasn’t the only one who noticed this.

“What’s wrong, Grandma?” Rudi murmured.

“They burned her,” she called out with her voice breaking even more. “They burned her at Auschwitz. But they could not burn that voice. Listen to it. It outlives them all.”

With the sun disappearing in Tommy’s window, Rudi walked into the room carrying a box of Reservoir pizza.

She brought him one almost every day. She brought it that day even though she knew he was connected to a feeding tube, in addition to those that helped him breathe and get fluids. She brought the pizza because it was one of the few things that still connected him to his old life and with being alive.

Staring at him in the doorway, Rudi noticed how he was having trouble turning a page of the Borges book, and he noticed her. Clumsily, he put the book under the covers. “Sorry.”

“You don’t have to hide it,” she told him. “Or be sorry for it.”

“I don’t want to upset you.”

“You can’t.”

“I bet I can.”

“How?”

“I talked to Him today.”

“Him?”

“You know, the other day I thought I had everything I wanted. I really did. But this morning I realized there was something else. So I asked Him.”

“Asked Him what?”

“I asked Him . . . I asked Him if I could have you.”

“You already have me.”

“I mean, later.”

Rudi froze. She couldn’t say a thing or even breathe, so she just stared at him until a handful of words came. “What did He say?”

Tommy grinned. “He hasn’t gotten back to me yet.”

“He must be pretty busy,” she told him with her own grin. One she had to force.

“Yeah, and then there was that I cursed Him pretty badly a while back.”

“He must be forgiving about those kinds of things.”

“I sure hope so.”

Grandpa and I came to Tommy’s door, looking to pick Rudi up for dinner.

He nodded down the hall. “She’s visiting Gary.”

Gary was one of Rudi’s clients. We came to his open door and saw a tallish man with a thin reddish beard, who seemed to have all the same tubes coming in and out of his body that Tommy had.

He turned toward us, and so did Rudi, who said, “I’ll be ready in a minute.”

She introduced us, and Grandpa held out his hand to the man. But Gary didn’t shake it. Instead, he glanced at Rudi. “Does he know about me?”

“I know all about you, Gary,” Grandpa answered, with a smile and with his hand still out.

Gary smiled back, and he shook Grandpa’s hand. He shook it for a long time.

“Is that a dominoes set?” Grandpa wondered as he nodded at the bureau behind Gary.

Gary turned to it. “Yeah. Unfortunately, it’s a lost art.”

“I love dominoes.”

“Would, would you like to play?”

A funny thing happened. Grandpa started to show up at the hospital a lot. He spent this time not just with Gary but with many of the other AIDS patients. He became something of a surrogate grandfather to them, some of which, like Gary, had been shunned by their own families. He was always there with a kind word or a piece of advice, and he would play board games with them and bring them little gifts, just like any other grandpa. Most importantly, he listened to them, and he never judged.

In return, Grandpa got a receptive audience for his endless detective stories. More than that he got purpose. No longer did he spend his afternoons in front of a TV, and never again did I hear him listen to Pergolesi.

I staggered inside the hospital with a trio of thick tomes from an unabridged edition of Richard Francis Burton’s translation of *One Thousand and One Nights*. I could barely carry them.

As I stepped through Tommy’s door, I saw him sealing a thick and blank envelope.

I nodded at it. “You want me to mail that for you?”

He shook his head. “I’ve got it.”

Grinning at the books I had brought, I lifted them as best I could. “This should hold you for a while.”

The telephone rang. So I put the books on the bed, and I walked over to the bureau to pick up the phone when I saw an oversized book beside it. A bilingual volume of the Talmud, which is a collection of teachings on the Torah, the first five books of the Bible. It tries to apply what’s written in them to answer questions that aren’t so easily answered, such as “why does God allow suffering?”

The book confused me, as it hadn’t come from my grandparents’ library, nor had Tommy ever expressed an interest in reading it. It certainly wasn’t the type of easy reading he enjoyed. It was anything but.

“Hello?” I spoke into the phone.

“It’s me,” Rudi answered. “I had to work late, and I missed the last bus. I hate to ask . . .”

“I’ll be right there.”

I stepped out of the elevator in the hospital lobby, and I saw Rabbi Orenstein in the distance with his back to me, sitting on a sofa next to a middle-aged woman who had her dirty-blonde hair tied in a bun.

I started toward them, wanting to say hello to the man, who I had met a few times and liked.

“I told you I would keep it a secret,” he softly said to the woman. “And I will.”

“How, how is he doing?” the woman asked while feigning disinterest.

“As good as can be expected, I guess. Fortunately, Rudi—”

“—I don’t want to talk about her or even hear about her.”

“But maybe you should.”

The woman shook her head.

“You know, I’ve been a rabbi now for many decades,” the rabbi went on anyway. “I see sick people and their families all the time. But never have I seen anyone as devoted as that young lady. And, believe me, there are many things related to Tommy’s disease that aren’t so pretty.”

“She probably feels guilty,” the woman growled.

“Guilty?”

“She’s the one who did this to my son, by bringing him into the gutter with her.”

I stopped right behind them, and I wanted to scream at the woman. But somehow I knew this was not what Rudi would’ve done or what she would’ve wanted me to do. So I rushed out of the building.

Only then did I scream.

Rudi was waiting for me on the street corner when I got to her office building in Florham Park.

I never understood how she got her job. She certainly couldn’t have been qualified for it right out of high school. But I guess her personal experiences counted for more, especially as she had those in excess, and there probably weren’t a lot of people who wanted the job.

This required her to reach out to those with the disease, whether at the office or in the hospital. She would try to lift up these young men, men who had lost all hope, despite being in short supply herself. Maybe that was the whole point: to raise all boats in the rising tide.

What they would talk about she never told me. All she would say was that often she would just hold their hands or hug them. She would try to make them feel that they were still human and still alive.

That evening, even in the darkness, I could see that the months of doing this job, along with all the time she had been spending taking care of Tommy, were weighing on her and in many ways. She looked as if she were about to fall over. Though, as she stepped into the Olds, I noticed that part of the reason for this was that she was carrying a few of those oversized volumes of the Talmud, which she put on her lap as I drove off.

I tapped the top book. “You know, it wasn’t long ago that women weren’t even allowed to read these books.”

“Those days are never coming back,” she said.

“Well?”

“Well what?”

“Have you found any answers in them?”

“No, but I can’t seem to stop looking.”

“*Pizzu přinesu do nemocnice*,” I said to Rudi as we drove down South Orange Avenue.

She tried to repeat it, but she got stuck on the “ř,” which has a sound that doesn’t exist in English or in almost any other language. Even for some Czechs it’s difficult to say. Grandpa once told me that he had a friend named Jiří who couldn’t say his own name until he was five.

“Are you sure you want to learn Czech?” I asked her.

She sighed. “Underneath the unpronounceable consonants and grammatical absurdity lies a big chunk of me.”

Looking back, I think it was more than just that. I think Rudi once saw herself as a leaf blowing in the wind, and all of a sudden she noticed the roots. But she was still trying to figure out how to plant them.

“It’ll take you forever to learn Czech,” I said to her.

“It’s no harder than Hebrew.”

This surprised me, and I turned to the books in her lap. “Are you reading those in Hebrew?”

“It’s hard enough getting at the truth, but when you’re not even reading the right words . . .”

We came to Reservoir, and I parked outside it so Rudi could pick up dinner for herself and Tommy.

“Just wait here,” she told me as I opened my door.

“Why?”

“Please.”

Reluctantly, I closed my door, and I watched her step inside the busy restaurant. Right away, I saw why she didn’t want me to come with her. Many of the people working there were glaring at her. This included an old man in a poorly-fitting suit, who was standing by the register with his arms crossed, and the woman behind the counter, who dropped a pizza box onto it in front of her.

Rudi ignored this. With a face fighting to project apathy, she quickly paid for the pie, and she left even quicker.

I dropped Rudi off in front of the hospital and went home. Like most nights, she stayed up late with Tommy so they could share their day of hopes and fears. On this night, though, it wasn’t just them doing the sharing.

“I can’t wait to meet her,” Rudi said into the phone while sitting next to Tommy and reading the Talmud. As she listened to the reply, she turned the page and became a little upset. “I am going to college. I just want to be sure for what.”

Rudi glanced at Tommy, and she noticed he wasn’t looking so good. “I gotta go. I’ll talk to you next week.”

She hung up the phone. “Maria says hi. So does Owen, Jared, and Eliot. I had breakfast with them this morning. Would you believe they’ve literally become *The Three Musketeers?* They go everywhere together.”

“I wonder who’s responsible for that?” Tommy muttered.

Snickering, Rudi put the book on top of the other volumes, and she took out a slice of pizza, which she tried to feed Tommy. But he groaned and looked away, and he shook his head over and over.

“You don’t want them to put back the feeding tube, do you?” she said.

Just the mention of this was enough for Tommy to turn back to her and gobble down pizza. He gobbled as much as he could. But he couldn’t keep it down. He had to clench his eyes closed and force his body to obey, and he could feel the sweat pouring down his face and his body shake.

Slowly, the misery subsided. While taking a deep breath, he opened his eyes, and he saw that Rudi was holding his hand and looking more pained than how he felt. It was as if she were trying to take his pain from him. I know she would’ve taken it all if she could.

He struggled with his words. “I don’t know why you go through this.”

“What do you mean?” she asked.

“You could’ve just sent me a card. No one would’ve blamed you.”

This angered Rudi, and she glared at him. Releasing his hand, she put the slice of pizza on top of the box and stood up. “There’s something I need to tell you.”

Realizing she wanted to lie beside him, he wiggled his frame and slid to his left, careful not to let his IV come out.

She joined him on the bed. She put her arm around him, and he laid his head on her chest and gripped her hand. “Don’t think I’ve done any of this for you,” she told him as coldly as she could. “I did it all for me. I’m the most selfish person alive.”

Tommy smiled. He smiled and caressed her hand, and again she was lost for words.

She found some, but she could barely get them out. “I was thinking today, I was thinking maybe I could change my look a little. Get some new clothes, a new haircut. Maybe I could be, I don’t know, maybe I could be someone who wouldn’t embarrass you.”

Tommy didn’t answer. He didn’t say a word.

“Did you hear me?” she whispered.

“I fell in love with a punk rock girl,” he told her. “A girl who was nobody but her. Nothing less would do.”

Rudi buried her head in his shoulder, I suppose to stop herself from crying, and she squeezed him with all her might. “You . . . you’re my fairy tale.”

Grandpa and I stopped in front of Gary’s room, so the two could finish the long game of dominoes they’d begun a few days before.

But Gary wasn’t there. Instead, Rudi was sitting on his bed with her arms around her legs and with her apathy face full on.

“Where’s Gary?” Grandpa asked.

“He’s gone,” she told him.

“Gone?”

“He died last night.”

Slowly, Grandpa approached the bed. He sat on it next to Rudi and put his arm around her. “I am sorry, dear. You know, in my long life, I have seen many of my friends and loved ones pass. I wish I could tell you it gets easier. I cannot. But I can say, if these people remain in your thoughts, somehow they never really go.”

Rudi rested her head on his shoulder. “He’s the third one in the last month. I don’t know if I can keep doing this.”

“If you do not, who will?”

Soon Tommy lacked the energy to read. So we all took turns doing it for him. Grandpa’s Kafka story had made him curious about *Good Soldier Švejk*, so he asked me if I could tell it to him.

“‘Do you know, Švejk, what is a march battalion?’” I read from Grandpa’s cherished copy of the book one afternoon by Tommy’s bed.

“‘I respectfully report, Lieutenant, sir, that a march battalion is what we call a *maršbaťák*, just like a *marška* is a march company. We are forever shortening things.’

“‘Well, Švejk,’ came the grave voice of the lieutenant, ‘since you enjoy such shortenings, I’ll let you know that you’ll be joining me in a *maršbaťák*. But do not think that on the front you’ll get away with the kind of stupidities you have here. Does that bring you joy?’

“‘I respectfully report, Lieutenant, sir, that it brings me tremendous joy,’ answered the good soldier Švejk. ‘It will be something truly wonderful when the two of us fall on the battlefield together for the emperor and his family.’”

Tommy and I laughed. We laughed a lot.

Rudi peeked her head in the room, seeing not only this but Nurse Templeton checking Tommy’s vital signs, which she did without a mask or gloves.

Small and slight and a little older than us, the nurse had long curly blonde hair and light-blue eyes and was one of the few in the hospital who actually liked taking care of Tommy. She even requested the assignment and became something of a personal nurse to him and many of the AIDS patients.

“Thank you, Kim,” Rudi murmured to the woman as she left the room, with a smile that was answered in kind.

“I brought you something,” I told Rudi, and I handed her a Czech book entitled *Pohádky Boženy Němcové*.

“What is it?” she asked.

“A collection of fairy tales. I know that’s not exactly your thing. But it will help you with learning—”

“—It’s exactly her thing,” Tommy interrupted with a grin, and Rudi grinned back with some embarrassment.

“Up for some company?” she then asked Tommy.

“Sure,” he mumbled.

My grandparents stepped inside the room, with Grandma carrying a casserole dish. “You must be tired of hospital food and all that pizza. So we brought you some noodle kugel. Vegetarian, of course.”

The two walked over to him. To make room for her on the bed, Tommy moved over, and his IV came out, and a little blood dripped down his arm. “Stay away from me!” he cried out in horror.

But Grandpa didn’t pay attention. Calmly, he grabbed a towel, and just as calmly he cleaned Tommy’s arm with it. “Blood does not scare us.”

Smiling at Grandpa, Grandma sat on the bed next to Tommy, and she began feeding him as the phone rang.

Rudi picked it up and answered it. I could see that the person on the other end of the line surprised her. It was all over her face as she walked the receiver to the corner of the room, where she whispered, “Mrs. Goodwin?”

The only response was the disappointment on Rudi’s face as she lowered the phone.

Rudi began working late so often that picking her up became a daily ritual. Part of this included getting a pizza at Reservoir and all the unpleasantness that came with it, which never let up. But on one particularly gloomy night, it was brightened a bit when, after she collected the pizza at the counter, she saw Rabbi Orenstein smiling at her from a table a short distance away. It was a smile that wiped away all the apathy she was feigning, and she struggled to make it out the door.

Rudi and I got off the hospital elevator at Tommy’s floor with the pizza, and we started down the hallway.

“Rudi?” came the voice of Dr. Kleiner, causing both of us to come to a stop. His voice sounded so ominous that it took Rudi many seconds to turn toward the man, who seemed to be fighting back his tears.

“What is it?” she said. She said it so softly that I could barely hear her voice.

“The Pneumocystis has gotten worse. If, if you have any special plans . . .”

“Does he know?”

The doctor nodded.

“When? When will he . . .”

“Soon.”

Rudi turned around, and she walked to Tommy’s room, with me following close behind.

“I want you to know something,” the doctor called out, with Rudi and I continuing down the hall. “You gave that boy a year of life. A year he wouldn’t’ve had otherwise. That’s no small thing.”

Rudi said nothing, and we approached Tommy’s room and the sound of coughing and labored breathing that was coming from inside it. As we reached the doorway, she mumbled to me. “I’ll call you tonight.”

I nodded, and she took a step into the room. But she stopped and hugged me.

“I wish I knew what to say,” I told her as I tried to keep myself together, for her sake.

“You’re saying it.”

Tommy wrote of how he took the news the doctor had given him. He took it better than Rudi. He had long expected it. He expected it from the time he woke up in the hospital after Deke had beaten him. He was even a little relieved to find out, as he knew his suffering would end. His only concern was Rudi, as the only pain after he died would be hers. All afternoon he thought of some way he could ease this. But he couldn’t think of anything.

Rudi slunk into his room, and she saw him staring at the simple metal menorah the rabbi had left for him earlier.

“It’s gonna be Chanukah in a few days,” he said after she didn’t say a word, not even hello.

“I know,” she muttered. “Grandma’s been showing me how to make potato latkes. We didn’t even have to substitute any of the ingredients.”

Tommy grinned. He grinned as he continued to stare at the menorah. “I must admit, when I was a kid, I had some serious Christmas envy. My friends, they all had Santa Claus and reindeers and Christmas trees, and all we had were a bunch of candles. I mean, so the oil in the Temple burned eight days. What’s the big deal, right?”

Slowly, he turned his head toward Rudi. “But I get it now. The miracle wasn’t that the oil lasted eight days. It was that it lasted longer than anyone could expect. That’s what we have to be thankful for. That’s what we always have to be thankful for, the exceeding of expectations.”

Rudi stood there looking for a response. She looked and looked and found one. “There are a few things I need to do right now. But you gotta promise me you won’t go anywhere.”

“Go?”

“Just promise.”

He thought about this. “I love you.”

“I love you too!” she shouted as she rushed out of the room.

“Where you going?”

“You’ll find out!”

Tommy hoped she was right. He hoped this all night.

I didn’t realize tears were falling down my face until after reading the last of Tommy’s entries that night. Quickly, I wiped them away, and I noticed that all the street people had finished showering and probably had a long time before.

“There’s only one night left,” I told Rudi as I tried to keep myself together, again for her sake.

“I know,” she told me back. “Call me tomorrow, but a few hours later than normal. I have to go to a dinner after services.”

We hung up, and I left the bathroom and felt something was wrong. I didn’t know what it was, but I stood there silently.

“Another hundred,” came Josh’s voice from inside the women’s bathroom a few steps away. “Give it to me.”

“But you promised me fifty percent.” Allison pleaded.

“That was after expenses.”

“But . . .”

“You know,” Josh interrupted, with his tone soft but in control, “I could throw you out of here. I could throw you out for just about anything. Actually, anything at all.”

“How am I going to make enough money to get out of this place?”

“I just may be able to help you out.”

I wanted to barge through the door and confront him. I even raised my hand to push the door open. But the weaker part of me was stronger, despite the so-called “moral code” inside me.

So I did the easy thing. I slunk down the hall while trying to convince myself that there really was nothing I could do for her.

the eighth night

I had Wednesday off and expected a long day of nothing.

While I got the long day, it was not what I expected, nor was it of nothing.

This began when I walked into the courtyard in the morning and saw Nicole raging at Matt and some others. “He was in the women’s room with her!”

“Did you see it happen?” Matt yelled.

“No, but Zara saw him follow her there. And she heard them arguing.”

“Is she willing to file a report with the police?”

Nicole didn’t answer.

“What’s going on?” I asked.

“Allison left last night,” she told me. “Because of Josh.”

“You don’t know that,” Matt growled.

“I know it, and I’m calling the cops.”

She took out her phone.

“What are you going to do when they kick you out of here?” Matt cried. “What about your kids?”

Nicole hesitated. But she started dialing a number.

“I heard them last night in the women’s room,” came my voice, or a voice that sounded like mine. Though perhaps it was more like my sister’s. My perfected me. “He was threatening her. He’s almost certainly trafficking her and the other women who’ve left in the middle of the night. I also saw him steal the steaks and ribs.”

“Are you willing to file a police report?” Matt howled.

“I’ll file it.”

“You sure?” Nicole whispered.

“I’m sure.”

She called the police, and I turned to Matt, who shook his head at me.

Nicole and I waited outside the gates of the shelter for the police. We waited forever. I thought I’d get more reluctant the longer we waited, especially when I thought about the consequences of what would happen. But I only felt better about it as time went on. I felt better about me.

Slowly, a police car pulled up in front, and a burly bald cop slowly got out of the vehicle and took my report.

“I need to speak to someone in charge,” he said.

Nicole pointed through the gates toward the office. “Dan. He’s the assistant director.”

The policeman went inside, and Nicole and I again waited. But we didn’t wait long.

“Well?” Nicole screeched when the man returned.

“This Josh has every right to be in the bathroom with the girl,” the policeman said.

“In the women’s room?”

“Even in the women’s room, if he has to carry out his duties there.”

“His duties? He was threatening her, and he’s trafficking her too. We have a witness!”

The policeman turned to me and glared. “What he heard could’ve meant lots of things. It’s no proof.”

“What about stealing all that food from us?”

“This Dan person says that there’s no record of any steaks and ribs being delivered in the past week.”

“That’s because Josh was in charge that night!”

“Sorry, I can’t help you.”

The policeman started toward his car, and I mentioned, “Josh has a record. Just check it out.”

The cop came to a halt, and he spun toward me. “How do you know he’s got a record?”

“I . . . I just know.”

“Do you know if he’s got a warrant out for his arrest?”

I shook my head. “There’s no warrant.”

“Then you’ve got nothing,” he barked as he got in his car and took off.

Glumly, Nicole and I glanced at each other, and we went back inside the gates, where I saw Matt scowling at me with his arms crossed. “Dan wants to see you, in the office.”

I nodded. “Don’t you have to be at work?”

“If only you had asked yourself that.”

I stepped inside the office, knowing exactly what was coming. I did with my head up.

Dan was sitting behind the desk next to one of his underlings, and he told me to take a seat in front of him while his underling took notes.

I sat down, and he said, “You have to leave. You have to leave right now. You broke so many rules that I don’t even know where to start. And be warned, if you mention any of this outside the shelter, we’ll sue.”

“Good luck serving the papers,” I uttered while trying to suppress a chuckle and not doing a very good job of it.

“You should’ve let us handle it.”

“You’ve turned a blind eye to all the abuse here, to all the young women leaving in the dead of the night, to all the thievery . . .”

“That’s a lie!” he howled, and he reached for the phone on his desk. “I should file charges against you right now!”

“For what?”

“Perjury!”

For a handful of moments, I thought about explaining to him what “perjury” actually meant. But while rubbing his nose in his own ignorance might’ve been enjoyable, it wouldn’t’ve accomplished a thing. So I finally took Matt’s advice as I rose to my feet. I smiled and waved as I started to the door, which is when I noticed an envelope from Tommy on the desk.

I pointed at it. “Can I get my letter?”

It didn’t take long to pack my things into the same grimy blue backpack I had brought months earlier. With this and a plastic bag of odds and ends, I went to the bathroom, where I saw myself in the big mirror. While I looked as thin and as old as ever, my image wasn’t so rotting, and I smiled.

This was still on my face when I left the dorm and approached the gates of the shelter, where Nicole was bashfully waiting for me. Fortunately, she didn’t get kicked out. Dan believed I had duped her into everything, and I was happy about that. She needed the place a lot more than me.

“This is not the end of this,” she whispered to me as we hugged. “I promise you that. Everybody’s gonna be watching him.”

*Who watches the watchers?*

Now there wouldn’t be just one.

“Congratulations,” came Matt’s voice.

Nicole and I broke our embrace, and I turned toward Matt a few steps away, who was trying to hide his “I told you so” face but wasn’t trying all that hard. “You got thrown out and for nothing.”

“It wasn’t for nothing. I satisfied my moral code.”

“Your what?”

“Do you know what Patrick Swayze once told me?” came Phil’s voice from behind us.

I turned toward him. “What was that?”

“He said, ‘Evil can only prevail when good men do nothing.’”

“It was Edmund Burke who said that.”

“You sure? Maybe he picked it up from Paddy.”

“Maybe.”

“Now what are you going to do?” Matt wanted to know.

“I think I’ll give Palm Springs a try,” I answered. “At least it’s warmer there.”

“And gayer.”

I grinned. “I could use a little gaiety. It is the season, after all.”

“What’s Amoun going to do?”

“I guess he’ll have to find himself another Hebrew.”

“In Victorville?”

We both laughed. We hugged too, and I thanked him for getting me the job and for being my friend.

Without looking back, I walked through the gates and started down the alley.

“Enjoy the streets,” I Josh called out from behind me.

Like with Dan, I wasn’t going to reply. Like then, I knew it wouldn’t’ve changed anything. But still I said, “Enjoy prison.”

“I’m not going to prison.”

I stopped and turned back to him. “Not today, and probably not tomorrow either. But one day.”

Again, I started off.

“How can you be so sure of that?” he shouted.

“I have faith.”

The one good thing about getting kicked out of the shelter was that I was free to spend my money. So I walked to my bank and took out a hundred dollars from the ATM. With this I bought a prepaid debit card at Walgreens and used it to buy a train ticket to Palm Springs over the phone.

The problem was that there was only one train to Palm Springs, and it didn’t leave until 4:30 the next morning, which meant I had a big wait ahead of me. With nothing better to do and no better place to do it, I started toward D Street and the Amtrak station at the end of town. This was one of the more notorious places in the city. More than one person told me how people got rolled there all the time, often after being drugged. But this was only at night. During the day, it wasn’t such a bad place. There was a big field behind the pretty little station and lots of trees and canyons behind them, and I sat on the grass and soaked them in.

The sun fell, bringing in a darkness that would come in many forms.

The temperature fell with the sun, and the winds rose. As the station was closed, I had to sit on a bench in front of the tracks. Never had I felt so cold as I shivered there. It was even colder than some nights I had spent in Eastern Europe when the temperature was well below zero, no matter what measuring system you used.

With the dark came the zombies. They came from nowhere. These were homeless people like me and all the others I’d known over the years, but they weren’t the same. With their lifeless eyes, they aimlessly roamed the station grounds in a fog, uttering incoherencies only they could understand while wielding crowbars that they swung through the air against horrors only they could see.

I guess I should’ve been frightened of them. But I had long been robbed of my fear of physical harm. This had gotten me through some rough situations over the years, as most predators, regardless of how many legs they have, feed off fear and need it to attack.

But this didn’t mean I’d been robbed of my sorrow. I felt this plenty, for all of us there.

Time moved slowly. This was made worse by checking it on my phone every few minutes. Trying to break the monotony, I went into the 7-Eleven across the street to buy hot chocolate and snacks, and I tried counting the endless freight cars that would pass every ten minutes or so. I even listened to *A Love Supreme* on my phone. But all this seemed to make time move slower.

The monotony was broken when I noticed a man standing by the tracks a little ways from me. Unlike the others I had seen that night, this man was no zombie. He had no crowbar, and he was in no fog. He was in anything but one.

He turned to me, and I saw the emptiness in his eyes. It was the same emptiness I had seen many times in my own eyes. Only his was worse, and this did scare me. I was scared of becoming him, because I could tell right away what he wanted to do.

Another freight train approached in the distance. As it got closer, the man turned back to the tracks and counted down aloud: “10 . . . 9 . . . 8 . . .” When he got to zero, he ran across the tracks in front of the train. He ran over the sound of the train’s frantic horn. Over and over it called out to him.

He made it across the tracks with less than a second to spare, and he continued running. He ran into the night and into the nothingness. He didn’t look back.

Earlier that day, it had taken the Victorville Police more than an hour to send one squad car to the shelter. But it didn’t take more than a few minutes for five of them to speed into the station’s lot. Not seeing anyone there but me, they naturally thought I had been the one who ran across the track, and none of them look pleased as they glared at me in the distance.

Warily, one approached, and he checked my explanation and train ticket (and my record.) After this, his demeanor and tone changed. “Whoever it was put a real fright into the train’s driver,” he told me with a bit of a cackle as he pointed his thumb at the tracks.

“I bet,” I said.

“Do you have any idea why he was playing chicken with the train?”

“He wasn’t playing chicken. It was Russian Roulette.”

Not replying to this, the policeman returned to the others. So their trip wouldn’t be a total waste, they decided to chase the zombies through the grounds. This went on forever. It was like watching an old Keystone Cops picture, a really bad one, as the police tried to herd and capture people who were well past either.

The chase began to wind down, and I remembered that I hadn’t called Rudi. So I took out Tommy’s envelope and my phone, and I dialed her. “I’m sorry to call you so late.”

“Are you all right?” she wanted to know.

“Why, why do you ask?”

“What’s all that commotion?”

“Oh, it’s just some kids playing.”

I pulled out the pages from the envelope, and I began reading them.

With the sun burning brightly into his room through the open shades, Tommy kept drowsing off, no matter how hard he tried to keep himself awake.

He’d been drifting into and out of consciousness since Rudi left the night before, and each time he drifted out of it he wondered if he’d drift into it again. Then he realized something, that his story couldn’t end like this. He knew this from how it began. Or at least he hoped this.

“Hey,” came Rudi’s soft voice.

Tommy opened his eyes, and he saw her tired but smiling face peeking inside the doorway, and he noticed how she was looking as if she were hiding the biggest secret in the world.

“Close your eyes,” she ordered.

“They just were,” he grumbled.

“Close them again.”

“What’s going on?”

“Just do it.”

He sighed, but he shut his eyes, and she said, “You can open them now.”

He did, and he watched Rudi strut inside the room carrying a shopping bag. He watched this with surprise, which came from what she was carrying in her other hand: the long train of the beautiful white wedding gown she was wearing.

Noticing his surprise, Rudi put down the bag and showed off the dress while releasing the train.

“You’re wearing a dress,” he gasped.

She put her hands on her hips and glared at him. “It’s a one-time thing. So enjoy it while it lasts.”

The gown seemed familiar to Tommy. “It looks like the one my . . .”

Slowly, Mrs. Goodwin entered the room, and she smiled meekly at Tommy.

At the end of that eventful day, the woman would tell me and many others in the lobby of the hospital how shocked she’d been when she saw the state of her son. But she said what was more shocking was how happy he looked. He looked happier than she had ever seen him and knew there could be only one reason for this all-too-obvious contradiction.

She took this person’s hand, and her smile became stronger. “Hello, Tommy.”

Tommy shook his head, unable to believe what he was seeing. “Mom?” he screeched as he opened his arms.

She rushed up and hugged him. “I’m so sorry.”

“I’m the one who’s sorry.”

“I missed you.”

“I . . . I . . . how did this . . .”

Mrs. Goodwin broke her embrace, and she turned to Rudi. “You were right about her. She is a lot like me. Hopefully, she’ll outgrow it.”

“How did this happen?” Tommy wanted to know. He wanted to know this so badly that it gave him a burst of energy.

“Shall we tell him?” his mother asked Rudi.

A taxi drove off, exposing Rudi, who was carrying the shopping bag and gazing at the big white manor in Newstead. The one that had so frightened her the first time she saw it.

It frightened her once more. But now she had no hesitation in approaching it. She marched up to the door, where she took a deep breath and rang the bell while she prayed. She prayed for one thing:

*The courage to change the things I can.*

The door slid open. Standing there was Elizabeth, who glanced at Rudi before looking away.

“Hi,” Rudi mumbled.

“Hello.”

“Is Mrs. Goodwin home?”

Elizabeth shook her head, causing Rudi to feel all the air leave her. But the woman added, “I’m afraid she won’t see you.”

“Please, Tommy’s dying. He’s dying right now.”

“There’s nothing I can do.”

“Please.”

The woman thought it over, with a face full of conflict. “All right, I’ll see what I can do.”

“Thank you so much!”

“I’m not promising anything,” she told Rudi as she hurried off while leaving the front door open.

Rudi began hearing sounds. The muffled sounds of two women talking. These got louder and more animated until they weren’t muffled at all.

“How dare you talk to me like that!” screamed Mrs. Goodwin.

“Somebody has to!” Elizabeth hollered.

“Tell her to go away!”

“You tell her!”

The conversation came to an end, and Rudi heard another sound, of footsteps. They were marching toward her and were followed by Mrs. Goodwin, who appeared in the doorway with a snarl. “What do you want?”

“Hi,” Rudi mumbled.

“What-do-you-want?”

“Tommy’s very sick.”

“You think I don’t know that? Who do you think has been paying his medical bills, not to mention for that little nest of yours?”

The latter revelation shocked Rudi, but she tried to pretend it didn’t. “Why won’t you see him?”

“He’s made his bed, literally.”

This made Rudi furious. She shook her fists at the woman. “He got it from tainted blood! Not that it matters. The disease doesn’t care who, why, or how. Only people like you care!”

“What do you want from me, money?”

“That’s all people like you ever think about: money. Making it and spending it and lording it over others. Well, maybe if you left this palace once in a while, you’d see there’s a whole world out there!”

Now Rudi wasn’t the only one furious. Mrs. Goodwin’s face turned a shade darker than red, and she became someone else. Someone that even Rudi found menacing. This someone took a step toward her with her own fists clenched, and then another, causing Rudi to step back in fear of someone for the first time since Deke died.

“People like me?” the woman roared with a strange and gruff accent. “You think I was born in this, this palace? They didn’t even allow Jews in this neighborhood when I was your age. You think you’ve had it rough, but you know nothing. I’m from Flatbush, the worst part of Flatbush. Growing up, we had no heat, no hot water. Half the time we ate pickles! So don’t you lecture me, you . . .”

Mrs. Goodwin didn’t finish her thought. Instead, she spun back to her door and rushed into her house, and she was just about to slam the door when Rudi called out, “This is your last chance!”

The woman stopped, but she didn’t turn around.

“This is your last chance to say goodbye,” Rudi went on. “Your last chance to make it right. There won’t be another. Please, Mrs. Goodwin, hate me all you want, but don’t hate Tommy. He doesn’t deserve it.”

Silently, Mrs. Goodwin stood in the doorway. It didn’t look as if she’d ever move. Then she turned her head, and she stared at Rudi. She stared and stared. “Let me get my coat.”

“There’s a favor I need to ask.”

Mrs. Goodwin hurried inside her house, followed by Rudi.

“You’re not wearing my dress,” the woman howled as she shook her head in a near constant motion. The idea of Rudi marrying her son was horrible enough but that she wanted to do so in her wedding gown was too much.

Rudi stopped in the doorway. “Mrs. Goodwin . . .”

Coming to her own stop, Mrs. Goodwin spun toward Rudi, and she saw the desperation in her eyes. This caused her to pause, but not for long. “Don’t you see how outrageous this is?”

Rudi lowered her head. “I know. You have every reason to say no. I would.”

The woman turned back around, but she didn’t go anywhere. “All right. You can wear the dress. But I won’t have anything to do with this . . . this so-called wedding. I’m just going to say goodbye to my son and leave.”

Rudi nodded. She did even though the woman couldn’t see it, and she followed her up the winding wooden staircase. As she reached the top, she noticed Elizabeth staring at them from below. She was staring in bewilderment.

Mrs. Goodwin sat on the edge of her bed with her arms and legs crossed, and she feigned disinterest as she watched Rudi put on the wedding dress.

But she couldn’t do this for long. Seeing how well the gown fit Rudi, she found herself rising off the bed and stepping up to her. From a nearby drawer, she grabbed a small box of needles, and she knelt in front of Rudi and started shortening the sleeves.

Looking a little lost, the woman murmured, “On my first date with Tommy’s father, he took me to see *The Sound of Music* on Broadway. He didn’t seem to be paying much attention to it. Or to me, for that matter. It wasn’t exactly love at first sight.”

Rudi grinned. “I know how that is.”

The woman grinned back. “So you can imagine my surprise when, after we got engaged, he said he wanted me to have a dress just like the one Mary Martin wore on our first date.”

“I always watch the movie when it comes on TV,” Rudi let her know. “I watch it every year. I’ve never told anyone that, not even Tommy.”

Mrs. Goodwin rose to her feet, and she led Rudi to a full-length mirror in the corner of the room, where Rudi blushed at her image. This must’ve melted whatever coolness the woman still felt toward Rudi, because she again grinned. “You’re so beautiful.”

Rudi shook her head, and she blushed even more. “Nah.”

“Don’t argue with your mother-in-law.”

The last word surprised Rudi. It was all over her face as she gazed at the woman in the mirror.

“At least not until after the honeymoon,” the woman went on. “That’s how it was with my mother-in-law. She was all peaches and cream until right after the honeymoon.”

Rudi’s eyes fell. “I guess I won’t have to worry about that.”

“What do you mean?”

Slowly, Rudi turned to Mrs. Goodwin, and she hugged her as she started to cry. “There’s not gonna be a honeymoon.”

Not knowing what else to do, the woman hugged her back. “Please don’t cry. You’ll ruin your makeup.”

“I can’t help it.”

“Oh, well. I guess you can’t ruin it any more than it already is.”

Both women laughed. They laughed loudly. Breaking their embrace, they grabbed each other’s hands, and Mrs. Goodwin nodded toward the door. “We better hurry. We’ve got a wedding to go to.”

The two finished their story, and Rudi again put her hands on her hips as she took a step toward Tommy with a snarl. “So, are you gonna marry me or what?”

“You call that a proposal?” he stammered.

“It’s the best you’re gonna get.”

“We . . . we’d need a . . .”

Rabbi Orenstein entered the room. He entered with a big smile as he took a juice glass from behind his back. “I believe that’s my cue.”

“We need to get you a tux,” Mrs. Goodwin said to her son.

“A tux?” he uttered.

“And somehow I’ll have to find a photographer.”

“And the guests will be coming any minute,” Rudi interjected.

“Guests?” Tommy uttered next.

“What about music?” Mrs. Goodwin asked Rudi.

Rudi took her portable stereo from the shopping bag, and she placed it on the bureau next to Tommy and hit play. The sounds of “Moonlight Serenade” filled the room, causing Mrs. Goodwin to gasp, “Glenn Miller?”

Rudi responded by sitting on the bed next to Tommy and taking his arm, and she told the woman she’d forever call her mother: “It’s our song.”

Mrs. Goodwin shook her head. “Kids today.”

Wearing an itchy suit that the moths in my closet knew better than me, I stepped inside Tommy’s room with a big cake box just as the rabbi left so he could complete his rounds before the ceremony.

I was shocked at Rudi’s appearance. I was so shocked that I almost fell over, along with the cake.

Seeing this, she grinned as she came up to me and did a pirouette.

“Who are you?” I cried out. “And what have you done with my sister?”

She giggled and slapped my arm, again almost sending me to the floor, along with the cake. But she grabbed me at the last moment and put her arm around me. “You’re gonna have to give me away today, big brother.”

“I don’t even know if Jews do that,” I told her, after chuckling at what she had just called me. She calls me it to this day, even though we never did find out who was born first.

“We’ll make our own rules,” she insisted.

I opened the cake box, revealing a beautiful multilayered wedding cake, on top of which stood painted wooden figurines of a bride and groom, with the bride’s hair spiked a bit. “Grandma was up all night making this,” I said.

“Where are they?” Rudi asked.

“They’ll be here soon. They dropped me off in front. Though I should tell you . . .”

“Did someone say something about a wedding?” howled Butch.

We turned around and saw Butch strut inside the room wearing a Black Flag T-shirt and a blue tie around his neck.

Rudi ran up to him and hugged him. Though noticing a record in his hand, she pointed at it with some annoyance. “What’s that?”

“A gift.”

“I told you, no gifts.”

“It’s not for you.”

Butch walked up to Tommy, and he handed him a copy of *Live Yardbirds: Featuring Jimmy Page*.

Tommy looked at the record in surprise. “I’ve never heard of this.”

“It’s very rare. It was only out for like a week.”

“Wow.”

“Now you have something to listen to when you get home.”

Tommy smiled. He smiled as he tried to keep himself together, and he took Butch’s hand with both of his. “Now I have something to listen to.”

Slowly, Grandma led Grandpa into the room by the arm, with Grandpa looking as if he were anywhere but there.

Seeing Rudi in her dress, Grandma stopped and threw her arms into the air. “My little girl!”

Rudi rushed up to her, and the two hugged and kissed as Grandma choked on her words.

“Perhaps you have none of my DNA, but you have all of my soul.”

Slowly, they broke their embrace, and Rudi turned to Grandpa and his daze.

“*Už jsme na Lucerně?”* he wondered, thinking he was at the dance hall in Prague he frequented as a young man.

“I’m afraid this is not one of his good days,” Grandma said.

Rudi smiled at him. She smiled and took him into her arms. “Thank you, Grandpa, for giving me this day.” While pulling him even closer, she added, “*Mám tě strašně moc ráda*,” telling him in the language he loved just how much she loved him.

A man of around twenty wheeled himself into the room. His name was Tony, and he was one of Rudi’s clients. Never once did I see him without a smile, but never was it as wide or as tall as it was when he came up to Tommy that day. “I guess this means you’re off the market.”

Tommy chuckled. “It looks so.”

“The best ones usually are.”

Mrs. Goodwin was somehow able to hire a photographer on no notice. He rushed into the hospital room with the tailor, who fit Tommy into a tuxedo under the watchful gaze of Mrs. Goodwin.

Nurse Templeton was the next to arrive. She came even though she wasn’t working that day, and she brought some more of the men Rudi had helped raise up, who were there to return the favor.

Following them the rabbi returned, and he said, “Look who I found.”

Walking into the room with him was a bashful Mr. Agnellino, who was carrying a stack of pizzas.

Rudi came up to them in surprise. “We didn’t order pizzas.”

“These are on me,” Mr. Agnellino told her.

“I don’t understand.”

He didn’t answer her right away. First, he put the pizzas on a nearby dresser, and he turned toward her and sighed. “You know, for a long time now, you’ve been coming into my restaurant. It’s seems like every day you come, and you buy a pizza from me, even though me and everyone else is mean to you. And none of us can understand why. Why is it she cannot get the message, this awful person everyone says such terrible things about? Then the other day Rabbi Orenstein, God bless his soul, he tells me who the pizzas are for. He also tells me all the wonderful things you’ve been doing for this poor . . . and, and I’ve never been so ashamed.”

“Forget about it.”

“I won’t. You’re a saint.”

“I’m not. Really.”

“Listen to me, I know a little about these things. You’re a saint. They come in all shapes and sizes . . . and hairstyles.”

Rudi tried hard not to grin, but she couldn’t help herself.

“I want you to know something,” Mr. Agnellino continued. “I want you to know that, from this day on, for as long as I own that restaurant, for as long as my children and grandchildren own it, you will be treated like a member of the family whenever you step inside. This is a promise.”

She hugged him, and he hugged her back as she mumbled, “You’re staying for the wedding, aren’t you?”

He nodded, and the rabbi asked, “So, are we ready?”

Rudi couldn’t answer, because Maria rushed into the room in front of him. She did wearing a blue gown and alongside a small woman with auburn hair, who was wearing a red dress and dark-rimmed glasses and looking like someone about to meet her in-laws for the first time.

Maria screamed her head off, and she flailed her arms and shook all over, and Rudi did much the same before the two ran up to each other and hugged.

“I didn’t think you’d make it,” Rudi cried out.

“She drove so fast that I don’t even remember passing Delaware,” interjected her friend.

“It’s easy to miss,” Maria insisted as the two kept hugging.

Many years later, I would reminisce about this moment and many others with Maria. She never did become a playwright. After college, she moved to Hollywood and became a sought-after screenwriter known for her strong female characters.

I once ran into her on Sunset Boulevard. Amid the heat and smog, she said, “I write about heroes all the time. But Rudi’s the only one I’ve met. There’s probably a little of her in every one I’ve created. Probably more than a little.”

Rudi and Maria broke their embrace, and Maria pointed to the woman beside her. “This is Sandra.”

Rudi shook the woman’s hand. “It’s great to finally meet you. Thank you for coming to my wedding and on such short notice.”

“Thank you for inviting me. I’ve never heard of anything so romantic, and you look so totally awesome.”

“I hate to be a spoiler,” the rabbi interrupted, “but I really need to be leaving soon.”

“All right,” Rudi uttered. “Let’s get this on.”

“Wait for us!” came the voice of a boy down the corridor, along with his footsteps and those of others.

Eliot rushed into the room. He was a senior now and no longer looked so geeky. He looked like the confident man he was becoming. The one who’d go to Stanford and to Silicon Valley, where he’d become an engineer and a high-tech entrepreneur.

“My favorite Quincy Punk!” Rudi yelled as she hugged him.

Owen came into the room next. With the help of his friends, he graduated high school and was working at a local auto repair shop. Some years later, with a little investment from Eliot, he would run a whole chain of them called Good Karma, whose motto was: “We treat our customers like friends. Because they are.”

Rudi jumped into his arms, into the arms of the man she had so unexpectedly come to care about, and she kissed him on the cheek, causing him to blush.

Jared was the last to enter. He was premed at Seton Hall University down the road and would eventually become a doctor. Working for a missionary organization, he’d spend his life traveling the world, giving care and comfort to anyone in need while making the most of the second chance he got.

Rudi hugged him the longest and hardest. I think it was because he knew more than anyone else there all the conflicting feelings she must’ve been experiencing, of both happiness and doubt as to whether she deserved any of it.

Wiping her eyes a bit, Rudi released her arms from Jared, and she turned to the rabbi. “We’re ready.”

The rabbi glanced around the room. “Where do I begin?” he said to everyone while blinking a bit at the flash of the photographer’s camera. “I’ve certainly never done a wedding like this. We have no *ketubah* or *chuppah*. We don’t even have wine. But what we do have are two young people who really love each other. Something I can readily attest. So hopefully God will give us a pass on the rest. Now, Rudi, you’re supposed to circle the groom seven times. But under the circumstances, why don’t you just sit next to him.”

Mrs. Goodwin, who was sitting next to Tommy on the bed, rose, and Rudi took her place. All of us crowded around them, and the rabbi gave Tommy a kippah. As he struggled to put it on, the rabbi turned to Rudi. “You are Jewish? I’ve just assumed by your last name and your interest in the Talmud and Hebrew and . . .”

Rudi looked as if she weren’t sure how to respond. Even after all the reading she had done and all the cooking and Sabbaths she’d experienced, I think she still wasn’t sure what she was, no matter what Jewish law told her. I think she still thought of herself as that leaf blowing in the wind, looking for someplace to root herself.

Again, the rabbi glanced around the room. “I realize that this is all rather un—”

“—She’s Jewish,” Mrs. Goodwin interrupted as she put her hand on Rudi’s shoulder.

Rudi smiled, and she put her hand on top of the woman’s. But the rabbi was still hesitant.

“She is our granddaughter,” Grandma called out, causing the rabbi to spin toward her and Grandpa. “She is as Jewish as we are.”

“Thank you, Grandma,” Rudi whispered. She whispered it in a voice rooted in love. “That was even better than the cake.”

“Who has the rings?” the rabbi asked next.

The question floored Rudi and was only answered with quiet.

“Someone does have the rings,” the rabbi went on.

Rudi lowered her eyes. “We don’t have any.”

“Oh, yes, you do,” Mrs. Goodwin said. “At least you have one.”

The woman took off her wedding ring, and she offered it to Tommy. But he shook his head. “I can’t let you do that, Mom.”

“Your father would’ve wanted you to have it. He would’ve been so proud of you right now. I’m proud of you. This, this is our wedding gift to you.”

Reluctantly, Tommy took the ring.

The rabbi pointed at it. “Put the ring on Rudi’s right index finger and repeat after me: ‘Behold, you are consecrated to me with this ring according to the law of Moses and Israel.’”

Tommy struggled with the words. He struggled even more than he had with the kippah. But, after many false starts and even more pauses once he got it started, he got through it.

Now it was Rudi’s turn, and she didn’t need to be told what to do. But she didn’t have a ring for Tommy. So she put a finger around his, and she smiled at him as she took her vow. “*Ani l’dodi, ve dodi li*. *I am my beloved’s, and my beloved is mine*.”

“We just have to break the glass,” the rabbi let everyone know. He found the juice glass and wrapped it in his handkerchief, and he put it between Tommy’s foot and the bedpost.

Tommy tried to break it. He pushed with all the strength he had left. But he just couldn’t break it.

The rabbi gazed out the door. “Maybe I could find a light bulb. It’d be easier.”

“I can do it,” Tommy growled.

Again, he tried, and again he couldn’t break it.

“Is it that important?” wondered Rudi.

“It’s that important!” Tommy hollered with his face red and sweating. “It signifies that joy must always be tempered, and no one knows this more than us.”

Rudi looked like she was coming undone. But she held herself together, and she took his free hand with hers. “You can do it, baby. I know you can.”

Tommy clenched his eyes closed, and again he tried to break the glass, and he wouldn’t stop trying. There wasn’t anyone watching this who wasn’t crying. Even Grandpa was crying, and so was the photographer, who had to stop taking pictures. A set of teardrops also fell down Tommy’s cheeks, just as the glass cracked.

“*Mazel tov!”* the rabbi cried.

The room erupted in cheers, but this did nothing to stop everyone’s tears. Mrs. Goodwin’s face, in particular, was bathed as she ran out of the room while calling out for her son.

“What comes next is the *yichud*,” the rabbi muttered as he wiped his face with the back of his hand, “where we’re supposed to give the bride and groom twenty minutes of seclusion.”

Mr. Agnellino grabbed the pizzas. “We can eat downstairs.”

He headed out the door with the boxes, and we all followed him after congratulating the couple and shaking their hands. Tommy tried to do this as warmly as he could, as he knew he wasn’t just saying goodbye to most of these people but farewell.

The last to leave was Maria. She’d been crying since before the ceremony began and was still crying as she hugged her best friend. “I love you so much.”

“I love you too,” Rudi screeched.

Reluctantly, Maria broke her embrace and left the room, and she closed the door behind herself.

“Close your eyes,” Tommy ordered.

“What’s going on?” Rudi grumbled.

“Just do it.”

She did, and she kept her eyes closed until he told her to open them, which was when she saw him putting his chai necklace on her.

Tommy clasped the necklace. “This is my wedding gift for you. Something to remind you.”

Rudi gazed at the pendant, and she took it between her fingers.

“But it isn’t to remind you of me,” he insisted. “It’s to remind you of that word . . . *living*. The most precious word there is. Don’t you ever forget it.”

Rudi started crying. To hide this, she leaned over to the stereo and hit play. With the music pouring into the room, she turned back to her husband with a smirk. “Just look at us, Tommy. Who’d have thought?”

“Me. I knew it from the beginning.”

The two just stared at each other, as if they didn’t know what to do next.

“So, are you gonna kiss the groom or what?” Tommy growled.

“You call that a proposition?” Rudi growled back.

“It’s the best you’re gonna get.”

Slowly, she leaned toward him, and she gently kissed him, with their lips barely touching.

Still, he swooned.

The elevator door opened, and Rudi rushed into the hospital waiting area and toward us.

We were all still trying to process what we had witnessed. Nobody was eating and barely a word had been spoken.

Rudi flew into the arms of Mrs. Goodwin, who muttered, “Tommy, is he . . .”

“He wants a piece a cake,” Rudi told her. “That son of yours is so strong. He’s so much stronger than me.”

“I’m not so sure about that.”

Tommy was right about his story not ending in the hospital. He hung on a little longer. This was just another small miracle in a year full of them, another chance to exceed expectations. No one knew how long it would last, but with the holidays upon them and with the hospital unable to do anything more for Tommy, the two decided to spend what time they had in their home together. He even got to listen to that Yardbirds record.

This was how Tommy’s journal ended. But like him, I knew from the beginning of the story that this wasn’t the end.

Knowing that only Rudi knew this end, I asked her.

She wouldn’t tell me, and I no longer could bribe her with more of the story.

“Please,” I begged over the phone. “It’ll be the best Chanukah gift I’ll get.”

She chuckled but didn’t say a thing. For a long time, she didn’t. But I knew she couldn’t turn down a request on the last night of Chanukah, not just because she was my sister but because she was also a rabbi. The kind others would aspire to be.

The end of Tommy’s story began on the first night of Chanukah. That year, this coincided with Christmas Eve, so the stores that day were mobbed. As the sun set and the snow fell all around her, Rudi found herself in front of the Livingston Mall, a place she loathed, like all places like it. But she wasn’t there for herself.

While listening on her Walkman to Lee Ving’s most unusual take of the holiday season, Rudi marched inside the building and through a corridor that led to the stores, in the direction of a woman who was leaving with two small children and lots of shopping bags. Horrified by Rudi’s appearance, which was likely made even more menacing because of all the snow on her, she pulled her kids out of Rudi’s path as if she were a charging lioness, and perhaps she was.

Rudi shuffled through a row of men’s shirts in a department store called Bamberger’s. She had been in the mall for an hour and had found nothing. Everything seemed ordinary when she needed something that was anything but.

*What do you give someone who’s about to die?*

Noticing a heavyset middle-aged security guard, who was anxiously watching her not far away while babbling into a handheld radio, Rudi took this as a sign to try someplace else. She sighed and headed back toward the mall area, followed by the guard every step of the way. He followed her until she left the store.

Sighing once more, she walked up to a railing and looked down at the first floor, where she saw a poorly-stuffed Santa Claus, who was doing nothing more than going through the motions.

“Fake,” she growled, “like everything here.”

Angrily, she started toward the escalator and the exits below. But she stopped when she spotted a chocolate shop.

With his hand shaking, the frightened clerk put some white chocolate in a paper bag, which he offered to Rudi with his hand shaking even more.

Rudi glared at him. Slapping some money onto the counter, she grabbed the bag, and she rushed out of the store and down the escalator toward the exits. But as she reached a corridor leading to the parking lot and the bus stop beyond it, something in a toy store window caught her eye. A miniature waterfall that looked much like the one Tommy loved but was no longer strong enough to visit. Best of all, she had just enough money to buy it.

“There it is, Mommy!” came a girl’s voice from the other side of the store. “There it is!”

Rudi didn’t want to look. She wanted to hurry inside the store and buy the waterfall. But she peeked her head around the corner of the building, where she saw a little girl of around five jumping up and down in front of the store’s window as she pointed at a lone Cabbage Patch Doll.

Slowly and without as much excitement, her mother walked up to the window and glanced at the doll. She especially glanced at its price before she turned to her daughter. Rudi could see the sorrow in her eyes as she tried to find the right words. “Maybe . . . maybe next year.”

The girl tried to hide her disappointment. But she couldn’t look her mother in her eyes. “It’s all right, Mommy. Really.”

“How about some hot chocolate?”

The girl nodded, and the two walked off hand in hand with their heads hanging.

Rudi tried to ignore this while trying to forget all the disappointing Christmases she had experienced as a child. This took some time, but she did both, and she rushed into the store and through it and came to a counter. Behind this stood a little man with thick glasses and a bow tie who looked older than time.

He turned to her. Unlike everyone else she’d encountered at the mall, he smiled at her. He smiled warmly. “Happy Chanukah.”

Thinking he must’ve been talking to someone else, Rudi glanced around. But there was no one else. So she turned back to the man in surprise, not understanding his kindness but especially not understanding how he could tell she was Jewish when she herself hadn’t known.

“What can I do for you?” the man murmured.

Rudi looked at the waterfall in the window. She looked and looked at it. But she pointed at the doll.

Slowly, the old man took the doll from the window. “You’re lucky. This is our last one. We literally couldn’t keep them in stock. That’s why we had to mark the price up so much.”

He brought the doll to the counter. “Do you want me to wrap it?”

Rudi looked out the store window, and she saw the mother and daughter drinking hot chocolate at a bench. “If you can do it fast.”

“It won’t take but a minute,” he said, and he started wrapping the gift. He wrapped it with a fancy gold paper fashioned from countless little stars.

“You think you could do me a favor?” Rudi asked.

“What’s that?”

She pointed out the window at the mother and daughter. “Could you give the doll to that woman over there?”

This surprised the man. He stopped with the wrapping and looked out the window at the two sitting on the bench, and he turned back to Rudi and shook his head. “I don’t understand.”

“Tell her, I don’t know, tell her that she’s won a contest or that it’s some kind of store promotion. Tell her whatever you want as long as it’s not in front of her little girl.”

Again, the old man looked at the woman and the girl. He looked at them longer than before, and he must’ve noticed their sadness, because he spun toward Rudi and smiled at her again. I bet he smiled even warmer than before.

“What about you?” he softly asked. “Can I get something for you to give?”

“I’m fine,” she groaned, and she started fishing through her seabag for her purse.

The man finished with the wrapping as Rudi put some money on the counter and rushed off.

“Don’t you want a receipt?” he called out to her.

“No.”

“Or your change?”

Rudi didn’t answer. She just left the store and headed out of the mall while cursing her stupidity. But at the corner of the corridor she again stopped. She stopped in the same exact place she had before, and she turned around. For a reason she didn’t know, she waited.

The old man exited the store. He did with a plain paper shopping bag in his hand. With a reluctant smile, Rudi watched him. She watched him inch toward the woman and her little girl. The little girl who’d still believe in fairy tales.

Rudi opened the front door of her apartment, to the sounds of “Moonlight Serenade.”

She saw Tommy walking a red gift-wrapped box toward the simple metal menorah on their mantlepiece, followed every step of the way by Flutter. She followed him as if her life depended on it.

Rudi noted how Tommy was no longer the gorgeous football player she had first met. But she found him more beautiful than ever and wanted to keep this locked inside her.

Tommy lowered himself to his knees, and he put the gift under the menorah. Slowly, he turned to Rudi, and he said, “You’ve caught me.” He said this with a smile. A smile she loved because she knew that he wanted to do anything but smile and was only smiling for her.

“I didn’t get you anything,” she told him as she shook her head.

“You’ve already given me your gift.”

“I did get you a little something.”

She marched up to him, and she kneeled beside him as she took off her bag and reached inside it for the chocolate.

Which he enjoyed that night in the arms of his gift.

the end